
起
偷天
血红 著

Stealing The Heavens

偷天

Author : Xue Hong 血红

Synopsis :

Steal a hook and they will hang you, steal the whole country and they will make you a prince.

Those who steal the world and the hearts of the people might become a Divine Immortal.

The Dao is boundless; the will of the people is limitless.

Follow me and watch how I alone use my hands to steal the heavens!

Info :

http://www.novelupdates.com/series/stealing-the-heavens/

Raws : None

Translator :

http://www.xianxiaworld.net/Stealing-The-Heavens/

NejiSpira
wuxiatranslationsdl.wordpress.com

Table of chapters :

Chapter 1 – Punishment Court Chapter 2 – Historical Relic Chapter 3 – The Priest Chapter 4 – Ancient Portal Chapter 5 – Inheritance Chapter 6 – The Villagers Chapter 7 – The Evil Barbarians Chapter 8 – The Alliance Chapter 9 – Barbarian Hunter Chapter 10 – Stealing Blood Chapter 11 – The Night Ride Chapter 12 – The Traveler Chapter 13 - Strike

Chapter 14 - Recruitment

Chapter 15 - The Mayor

Chapter 16 – Provocation Chapter 17 – Magical Item Chapter 18 – The Burglary Chapter 19 – Establishing Authority Chapter 20 – Tough Mission Chapter 21 – Night Walk Chapter 22 – Expel

Chapter 23 – Tough Situation Chapter 24 – Partner In Crime Chapter 25 – Rush In

Chapter 26 – Steal Again

Chapter 27 - Impeach

Chapter 28 – Night Assassin Chapter 29 – The Formation to Kill

Chapter 30 - Slaughter

Chapter 31 – Beheaded

Chapter 32 – Marquis

Chapter 33 - Ruthless

Chapter 34 - Brothers

Chapter 35 - Malice

Chapter 36 - Cultivator Chapter 37 - Sudden News Chapter 38 - Travel Together Chapter 39 - The Forest Chapter 40 - Beast Warrior Chapter 41 - Seizing Souls Chapter 42 - The Ritual Chapter 43 - Merging Soul Chapter 44 - Serpent Pearl Chapter 45 - Got it

Chapter 46 - Run for Lives Chapter 47 - Killing the Marquis Chapter 48 - Furious

Chapter 49 - Kill Everyone Chapter 50 - Aftermath Chapter 51 - Scholar and Military Chapter 52 - Confrontation

Chapter 53 - The Last Assassins

Book 1, Chapter 1 – Punishment Court

June, some island in Indonesia, the sun was shining brightly.

An antique Chinese designed building hidden among the green woods. Copper colored pillars, natural green with a hint of brown colored roof tiles and roof corners pointing upwards like an eave. There was a Divine Beast statue made from tri-colored pottery on top of the roof. Everything about this building was mysterious and solemn. (1)

This was Underhand Sect's headquarter.

In the last building in this courtyard stood a small black building made of stone. On top of the door leading into the building was a blood red signboard with two words, 'Punishment Court' was neatly curved on it.

The Punishment Court in the Underhand Sect is responsible for punishment and sentences, all the disciples of the sect would tremble with fear upon hearing its name.

Within the main hall of the Punishment Court, there lay an altar in the middle of the hall. Spirit tablets of the Underhand Sect Grandmaster and the patriarchs of the different generations were placed and worshipped on it. Underneath these spirit tables, four big chairs lined up in a straight line. The underhand sect's Punisher, Commander, Instructor and Guardian were sitting on the 4 chairs.

On both left and right side of the hall, nearly a hundred disciples of the Underhand Sect were standing formally. Some were tall, some were short.

Some were fat, some were skinny. Some were good looking, some were ugly. All kinds of appearances were here. Some of them wore suits, some were shirtless. Some wore long gowns, while some wore street jackets. Some of them looked no different than a gangster on the streets, and their appearances were weird as well.

All disciples were focusing on themselves. They remained silent and dared not show any disrespect, they even tried breathing as softly as they could, afraid they would disturb the hall's stern atmosphere and get scolded by the Punisher.

Wu Wang wore a long green shirt, he cupped his fists and bowed politely towards the four elders who held the power of this sect.

"Elders, Shangguan Ye who violated the rules of the sect and behaved outrageously has been caught alive! I request Elder Punisher to punish him according to the rules of the sect!"

All four elders of the Underhand Sect had gloomy expressions. Elder Punisher gazed at Wu Wang and waved his hand slightly, he cleared his throat and said, "Substitute Elder, where is Shangguan Ye?"

Wu Wang showed a watery smile as he turned his head around and beckoned. Wu Qi and a few other men looking as strong as wolves came in carrying a middle aged man who was tied by a rope like a dumpling. The middle aged man's mouth was filled with two walnuts, he stared angrily at Wu Wang as he kept making a 'wu wu' sound, but he was unable to say a single word.

After throwing Shangguan Ye onto the floor, Wu Qi squeezed his mouth

a few times with a smile, then he took out the walnuts in his mouth.

Although Shangguan Ye was tied like a dumpling, he was still flexible like a money. Just right after Wu Qi took the walnuts out of his mouth, he twisted his body and jumped up. He casually stood up in the middle of the Punishment Court.

Staring angrily at Wu Wang, Shangguan Ye roared out crazily, “Wu Wang! How dare you ask someone to catch me?!”

Wu Wang showed a sneer smile. Wu Qi kicked Shangguan Ye’s foot, forcing him to kneel down.

With one hand pressing down on Shangguan Ye’s shoulder, Wu Qi smiled gently and said, “Uncle Shangguan, my master is the Substitute Elder.”

Shangguan Ye struggled violently, he roared out like an animal, “Fucking Substitute Elder! Bullshit Substitute Elder! Wu Wang, I won’t submit to you! I will not submit to you! My dad was the previous Sect Elder, the Sect Elder position should be mine! It is mine!”

Wu Wang smiled as he took a few steps back.

Elder Punisher gazed at Wu Wang whose face had a big smile, he suddenly stomped hard on the ground and shouted, “Ridiculous! Shangguan Ye, look carefully, where are you right now?!”

Shangguan Ye’s body trembled, he rolled his eyes as he looked at Elder

Punisher who had a stern face and said with a cold smile, “Where am I now? This is the Punishment Court! What mistake have I, Shangguan Ye, done to make the Punishment Court want to punish me? Elders, look at how honorable I, Shangguan Ye am, do I really deserve this?”

All four elders furrowed their brows. They peeked at the man who stood behind Wu Wang, Le Xiaobai who had long hair and a skinny body like a wandering soul.

Taking a long sigh, Elder Punisher shouted with a deep voice, “Shangguan Ye, three months ago, did you strike continuously? Did you bring out disciples to steal from 17 families?”

Raising his head straight, Shangguan Ye smiled coldly and said, “That’s right, but what’s wrong about that? We are the Underhand Sect, isn’t stealing what we are supposed to do?”

Wu Wang smiled slightly, he held his hands behind his back and said nothing.

Le Xiaobai waved his big folding fan and took a few steps forwards. With a cold smile he said, “Yes, we are the Underhand Sect, what we do here is a thief’s dirt work.”

Taking a long sigh, Le Xiaobai said with a compassionate voice, “But, there’s a saying that even thieves have their morals. The rules set by the founding Grandmaster is; even we in the Underhand Sect were about to die of poverty or hardship, we’ll never target innocent people!”

The folding fan knocked Shangguan Ye's shoulder hardly. Le Xiaobai pointed at Shangguan Ye and scolded, "But Shangguan Ye, he continuously stole from 17 rich families, he even stole 6 family heirlooms. Those 6 families who had their heirlooms stolen are all good people who all do good deeds!"

Silence filled the Punishment Court, everyone looked at Le Xiaobai and Wu Wang.

Shangguan Ye twisted his body and tried jumping up, but Wu Qi pressed down on his shoulder, forcing him to stay where he was.

Suddenly, dozens of breaking noises sounded out. Shangguan Ye's body twisted, and those ropes that were tightly tied around his body were all snapping. Both of Shangguan Ye's arms were flexible like snakes. With some agile moments, the arms finally escaped, then they pressed towards Wu Qi's stomach together with a cold wind.

Wu Qi laughed softly, both his palms moved so fast that only a shadow was visible. His shoulders twisted like there was no bones there, then he silently confronted Shangguan Ye.

A subtle impact sounded out, Wu Qi was still standing in his previous position, his feet hadn't moved an inch, but Shangguan Ye was rolling around on the floor with blood dripping out of his mouth because of the impact.

Gazing at Wu Qi in shock, Shangguan Ye shouted fiercely, "Little bastard, you joined the sect not even three years ago, how come your palm's strength is greater than mine?"

Wu Qi took two steps forwards and kicked Shangguan Ye's chest, sending him flying up into the air. Wu Qi smiled and said, "Uncle Shangguan, as the son of the previous Sect Elder, not only did you violate the rules of this sect, you even attacked someone openly in the Punishment Court, your crime is now three times more severe! Are you going to commit to all the crimes you've committed?"

Wu Wang cleared his throat, Le Xiaobai turned back and fiercely gazed at all four elders.

All four elders squeezed their hands which were placed on the handle of their chairs, directly crushing it and turning it into ashes.

Elder Punisher took a long breath before he stood up and shouted angrily, "Men, Shangguan Ye first violated the rules of our sect, then he attacked someone openly in the Punishment Court! His crimes can't be forgiven! Considering the fact that he is the previous Sect Elder's only son, his sentence will be the disposal of all his skills and imprisonment underneath the ground of the Underhand Sect for the rest of his life!"

Le Xiaobai cupped his hands, shouting calmly in agreement.

All the disciples of the Underhand Sect in the Punishment Court clapped their hands together and said, "Elder Punisher is far with rewards and punishments! We, the disciples, are all convinced from deep within!"

Shangguan Ye stared at all the disciples with a startled look and shouted, "You guys… You guys!"

Elder Punisher stomped his feet and asked angrily, “Where’s the disciples of punishment?”

Wu Qi answered the call, he leapt towards Shangguan Ye, both palms moving like swallows flying through a forest. They hit every part of Shangguan Ye’s body.

Shangguan Ye barely managed to defend against Wu Qi’s first few attacks. Blood poured out of his mouth, then he finally lost all his energy. His Dantian was hit 18 times by Wu Qi. Wu Qi’s chilly palm forcefully penetrated Shangguan Ye’s Dantian and destroyed all the Inner Vital Energy that he had cultivated during the last 10 years.

After destroying all of Shangguan Ye’s skill by force, Wu Qi had a smile on his face that was not only gentle, but also friendly and affectionate.

“Uncle, it’s been a hard day for you, time for you to get some good rest.”

Without minding Shangguan Ye’s horrible scream, a thin black sharp blade appeared out from nowhere between Wu Qi’s fingers. The blade cut through the air faster than wind itself onto Shangguan Ye’s wrist, elbow, and all the joints. When the blade cut through the flesh, the razor sharp edge vibrated slightly, instantly cutting off a few important nerves in Shangguan Ye’s arm.

Shangguan Ye was screaming pitifully. Great amounts of blood poured out from his arms.

His Inner Vital Energy was gone, the nerves on both his hands were all cut. Shangguan Ye was now a crippled man.

Wu Qi kept smiling and said, “You have violated the rules of this sect. But, I’m sure you didn’t do it on purpose. I guess it was nothing but an unintentional mistake. But no matter what, the rules of this sect are to be obeyed! We, the Underhand Sect, can only survive in this world for so long, the rules cannot be broken!”

Sighing softly, Wu Qi looked at Shangguan Ye and said with a serious tone, “Sir, you can just rest assured! All the spending and consuming for the rest of your life will be handed by your responsible disciple, me!”

Shangguan Ye started at Wu Qi and started laughing painfully, he nodded his head and said, “Fine, fine, you rascal who is only worth $100, very good of you!”

Spitting a mouthful of blood onto Wu Qi, Shangguan Ye turned around. He gazed at the four elders while trembling and laughing coldly. He cursed grimly, then he finally stared towards Wu Wang.

“Seven years ago, my dad used the last drop of the ‘Mending and Patching Ointment’ and made your destroyed nerves connect. Today, your disciples abolished all my skills! Wu Wang, I, Shangguan Ye, will fight you till the end of my life!”

Wu Wang bowed to Shangguan Ye with a serious expression and said, “Senior Disciple Shangguan Ye, you have violated the rules of this sect, this is the punishment you deserve! The grave of teacher towards Wu Wang, I will remember for sure! In the future, senior disciple should just

enjoy his retirement underneath the grounds of the Underhand Sect peacefully. All your expenses will be paid by me, Wu Wang, alone!”

Looking at Wu Qi with a praising expression, Wu Wang waved his hand and said, “Wu Qi, you have expressed your filial respect, but senior disciple Shangguan is your elder in this sect, how could he spend his junior’s time? Senior Disciples Shangguan will enjoy his retirement within the vicinity of the sect in the future, we all have to take good care of him!”

Wu Qi hurriedly bowed down respectfully.

Gazing at the disciples within the Punishment Court sternly, Wu Wang shouted seriously, “Remember this all of you, for the disciples of the Underhand Sect, anyone who dares violate the rules of our sect, let Shangguan Ye be your example!”

Wu Qi kept the small sharp blade between his fingers. He signaled a few disciples of punishment to drag Shangguan Ye away from here.

Shangguan Ye struggled violently, he raised his head and laughed in a horrifying manner, “Wu Wang, Le Xiaobai, Wu Qi, I won’t let any of you go! Hahaha, you’re dead meat, you’re just seeking death! And you four old fools, I won’t let any of you go either! I, Shangguan Ye, will exterminate all your families!”

Shangguan Ye was dragged out of the Punishment Court by force while laughing like a maniac.

Shangguan Ye’s horrifying screams could still be heard from afar.

“All of you, just wait! I’ll find each and every one of you and get my revenge!”

From the sleeve of the crazily struggling Shangguan Ye, a paper crane made with yellow paper suddenly burned itself to ashes without any fire in an instant.

Wu Wang stuck out his chest and stared at all the disciples in the Punishment Court, he spoke faintly, “Disciples of the Win Court, please go and gather information about the whereabouts of all the stuff stolen by Shangguan Ye. Never mind the unimportant stuff, but the 6 family heirlooms must be returned to their owners!”

Gazing at the four elders, Wu Wang said faintly, “The Underhand Sect’s rules cannot be broken while in our hands!”

The four elders looked at each other and sighed at the same time.

The Guardian trembled as he took out a palm sized golden plated box from a secret pocket near his chest, he took it out in a serious manner.

“Substitute Elder, this is the token of the Sect Elder. Except for Shangguan Ye, no one here is against the decision of making you the Sect Elder!”

All four elders cupped their fists and bowed politely towards Wu Wang, “We invite Substitute Elder to officially take command of the Underhand Sect!”

Every single disciple in the Punishment Court kneeled down together.

“We invite the Substitute Elder to officially take over the command of the Underhand Sect!”

Without showing shyness, Wu Wang took the head and nodded his head firmly.

Le Xiaobai and Wu Qi looked at each other, a smile appeared on their faces at the same time.

Book 1, Chapter 2 – Historical Relic

The lost mountain, Machu Picchu.

Down the hill on the tourist's path towards Machu Picchu, local police had set up a roadblock, preventing the public to enter. The reason for this is that there is an important archeology assessment going on at Machu Picchu, so the public is prevented from even getting close to it.

At the border of Machu Picchu which was 2000 meters above sea level, three capable and vigorous disciples of the Underhand Sect were watching around alertly with micro machine guns.

Wu Qi was sitting on the wall of a building that had no roof. He admired the surrounding scenery with a can of beer in his hands and a smile on his face.

The surrounding mountain scenery in Machu Picchu was pretty amazing. Amazing green hills were everywhere, the morning fog was hovering around, mist dragon long white lines along the mountainside with the help of the morning wind. This place was like a fairy land people could only daydream about.

After drinking up the remaining beer, Wu Qi squeezed the beer can and threw it far away.

He unconsciously touched the secret pocket on his belt. The Sect Elder Token for the Underhand Sect was now laying quietly in his secret pocket.

According to the Underhand Sect's rules, the Sect Elder Token has to be with the Sect Elder at all times, it can't be anywhere else. But, Wu Wang is not someone who follows rules all the time, he was now with a group of elite disciples and was checking on Machu Picchu. He did not want to have an extra burden with him.

He handed over all his important things to Wu Qi who wasn't familiar with the assessment on the historical relic. He brought a group of elite disciples himself, and right now he was busy working in the ruins of Machu Picchu.

In an abandoned temple about 200 meters away, Wu Wang who was only wearing underpants stood straight up. He coughed out loudly and spat out a thick sputum. It was heavily raining before this, the temple was filled with thick dust, the rain water and the dust mixed together became dirty mud. Wu Wang was now covered in this mud and looked like a wild monkey.

Throwing away the ultrasonic detector, Wu Wang took a few steps back and suddenly leapt forwards, hitting a brick in the corner of the temple with his palm. The instrument had detected something special in the temple, and with the experience and judgment of the Underhand Sect's elite disciples, it was easy to find out that this brick was a switch that controlled some mechanism within the temple.

All of Machu Picchu trembled for a moment. Followed by Wu Wang's forceful strike, the brick slowly submerged into the wall. In the hall without a roof on the east side of the temple, a few hundred carefully carved bricks laying on the floor quietly started sliding away, quietly submerging into the ground and showing an entrance to an underground passage which was large enough to allow three grown men to walk side by side.

Wu Qi grabbed a shark skin scabbard beside him, the handle was made with copper, and the locket was made with gold. Numerous gemstones were mounted on the scabbard itself.

This is a sword that an elder from the Underhand Sect three generations ago stolen from an ancient tomb underneath a Sword Pool. On the sword's blade two words were carved in, 'Dragon Abyss'. But, it was unknown whether or not this sword was the same Dragon Abyss sword as the one made by the legend Ou Yezi.

This Dragon Abyss sword is extremely sharp, combat knifes made with modern day alloys can't even withstand a single light hit from it. As Wu Wang's only successor, and being the disciple with the highest status in the Underhand Sect, Wu Qi obviously has the right to use it.

Dozens of capable and vigorous men from the 'Greedy Wolf Group' of the Underhand Sect carried a variety of weapons and followed closely behind Wu Qi.

The Greedy Wolf Group is an elite group. After Wu Wang joined the Underhand Sect, he spent a few years adopting orphans from different places and trained them to form a skilled team. Under Wu Qi's lead, the Greedy Wolf Group played an important role in the fight for power amongst Wu Wang and Shangguan Ye.

Carrying the Dragon Abyss sword in his hands, Wu Qi led the group and entered the underground passage.

After taking a few steps into the passage, Wu Wang who was

overexerted turned around and started dragging Le Xiaobai who looked unwilling to follow.

Wearing a long robe, the clean and tidy Le Xiaobai who looked like a noble young master who was about to eat dinner struggled. He shouted loud and said, “I can’t stand being dirty! I can’t stand being dirty! Big Brother, Sect Elder, Uncle Wu, I hate going underground, can you please not drag me along?”

[TL: He’s referring to Wu Wang in all 3]

Wu Qi remained silent as he grabbed a chunk of dirty mud from the mud pond on the ground in the dark, then he put some of it on Le Xiaobai’s face.

Le Xiaobai was startled. He started blankly at the dirty mud water that was dripping down from his face, his body started violently trembling.

“Wu Qi! You ungrateful brat! Have you forgotten who the one who brought you out from Africa was?!” Le Xiaobai’s folding fan almost touched Wu Qi’s nose.

Wu Qi’s lips twitched a little, he shrugged his shoulders and said, “Last year in Amsterdam, who was the one who had no money to pay for women and asked me to save him? You bought me with only $100 in Africa, that day I paid $3,800 for you! Even if we take the inflation into consideration, I’ve already repaid all your favors!”

Staring and the stunned and speechless Le Xiaobai, Wu Qi teased and said, “As the White Folding Fan of the Underhand Sect, you still let those little gangsters in Netherland steal your wallet… If the previous

grandmasters of the different generations rose from their graves, they would strangle you to death while you're asleep!"

Wu Wang started laughing out crazily. Le Xiaobai's lips twitched for quite some time. Suddenly, he stomped his feet. He accepted his fate and threw away the folding fan. He undressed his long sleeve shirt and led the group forwards in low spirit.

With high intelligence like a freak and a body so thin that even the most famous catwalk models couldn't compare, Le Xiaobai had mastered all the Underhand Sect's books about traps and mechanisms, he even innovated some new techniques. As long as he led the way, there were basically no traps that could trouble Wu Wang, Wu Qi and the rest.

Wu Wang has strong leadership and organizational abilities.

Wu Qi has strong innate skills towards martial arts and combat skills.

But the one who really inherited the genuine skills that made the Underhand Sect famous was still Le Xiaobai.

Complaining and mumbling to himself, Le Xiaobai led all the men along the passage and slowly entered deep into the mountain. There were dozens of deadly traps hidden in the passage, but they were all cracked by Le Xiaobai with ease.

"I hate actions that insult my intelligence!" While breaking the traps along the way, Le Xiaobai kept mumbling to himself, "Intruding someone's ancestor tomb, breaking in by force... This doesn't involve any

intelligence!”

Nobody really cared about Le Xiaobai’s mumbling.

Wu Wang brought a few of the disciples and set up some lights and ventilations along the passage. Wu Qi led the Greedy Wolf Group and carefully watched the surroundings. In this kind of historical relic, some strange things might happen.

Last year, they were in an underground tomb within the King’s Valley in Egypt, they met a mummy who was still alive. Wu Qi and over 30 Greedy Wolf Group elites fought a tough battle before finally dismembering that mummy.

The mysteriousness for the Inca remains is similar to Egypt. Wu Qi was prepared to strike his sword at all times.

Luckily, no abnormal accidents happened. After Le Xiaobei cracked 64 traps along the passage, everyone arrived at the end and stood in front of a huge metal door. The door was made with gold and silver, and there were numerous mysterious patterns on top of it.

The rectangular shaped door was 12 meters high with a width of 3 meters. The door reflected silver and golden colors when pointed at with the searchlight.

Le Xiaobai came closer to the door and forcefully impaled it with a needle.

“60% gold and 40% silver, the purity is pretty high. This door alone is worth more than all we spent to get here!”

After all these years in the Underhand Sect, Le Xiaobai had achieved an amazing assessment ability. By just slightly impaling the door with a needle, he had already analyzed all of the doors components. It was made with the purest gold and silver, 60% gold and 40% silver. The materials were so good that even if the door was just normal size, it would still be an astonishing fortune.

Wu Wang extended his hand and grabbed a golden plate with a polygonal sun shape on it, it closely resembled the Inca culture. Wu Wang looked at the door with a smile, “I’m really curious, if the front door is so expensive, what will be behind this door?”

Wu Qi stared at the door, suddenly he drew his sword. A layer of water shadows shot out from the scabbard, producing a sonic boom and hitting the door.

Wu Qi had amazing talent, after practicing with full effort for four years together with Wu Wang, his inner vital energy was almost at the same level as the four elders of the sect. The Dragon Abyss sword was an ancient sharp sword, the blade resembled water. When agitated by inner vital energy, the sword’s edge would spit out three inches of lightning, tearing the air apart as it flew towards its target.

After a loud bang, lightning started blinking around the huge door, an arm sized lightning bolt shot out from the door, violently striking the Dragon Abyss sword.

Wu Qi's arms were affected by the lightning strike, the sleeve on his right harm was instantly turned into ashes. His body was covered in lightning, and he was sent flying away while swinging his arms and feet in midair from the explosion.

He felt extreme pain in his body, every single cell in his body had been penetrated by the high voltage. If it wasn't for Wu Qi having strong inner vital energy to support him, the lightning strike would've just killed him.

Le Xiaobai who was standing next to the door jumped at least 2 meters backwards in fright, he shouted with a shock expression, "Go to hell! Those uncivilized ancient Inca men, how did they invent a high voltage electric net?!"

Wu Wang gripped the golden plate in his hand tightly, he stared at the huge door and shook his head, "Bullshit, high voltage electric net? If it really is that, then you would've been killed earlier!"

Wu Wang turned around and looked at Wu Qi with a worried expression, "Wu Qi, are you ok?"

Taking a deep breath, he carefully circulated the inner vital energy throughout his body one round. Wu Qi grinded his teeth and stood up. He shook his head and said, "I'm okay, but that lightning bolt consumed 70% of my inner vital energy."

Gazing at the Dragon Abyss sword he was holding tightly, this sword truly deserve to be a famous ancient sword. After being hit by a lightning strike, there was no change in the sword itself. But, a mysterious blue color had appeared among the natural green color on the sword. The

mysterious blue color closely resembled the electric lightning that appeared earlier.

Moving his body a little, Wu Qi grit his teeth and said, “Teacher, we’ll need to use that golden plate. This door, I’m afraid it’s just as weird as that living mummy.”

Wu Wang furrowed his brows. He held the golden plate tightly in his hands and started carefully moving closer to the door.

The golden plate was obtained by the disciples of the Underhand Sect a few months ago in a private museum in South America. With the Underhand Sect’s skillful judgment, this golden plate has a huge value no matter how you look at it, the material or the words carved on it, all valuable.

Therefore, this relic has arrived in the Underhand Sect smoothly. After being carefully studied by a few professionals with knowledge about the ancient history and language, they followed the clues on the golden place and finally arrived here.

The clues on the golden plate hadn’t fooled any of them. Let’s forget about everything else of value, just this huge door that can release lightning strikes and automatically attack has made all their efforts worth it. As for what’s behind the door, it only made the people here even more excited.

Carefully covering his right palm with vital energy and showing extreme caution, Wu Wang inserted the golden plate into a laughing sun symbol right in the middle of the door.

Just after the golden plate was inserted, the door suddenly started emitting a strong light. Wu Wang jumped backwards and kept a distance of at least 30 meters. The huge and heavy door quietly opened up by sliding both door panels to the side, presenting a huge space filled with bizarre lights.

Wu Wang gasped in astonishment and said, “We’ve struck rich this time!”

Wu Wang’s eyes kept widening as he blankly stared at the bizarre items inside that space.

Le Xiaobei extended his neck while mumbling to himself unconsciously, “Maglev? Deity? Immortal? Isn’t this going too far?”

Before he finished his words, three green light suddenly shot up from the ground behind them.

A few sounds were heard, the green light swept across everyone like a shining stretch of silk. Aside from Wu Wang, Wu Qi and Le Xiaobai, the rest of the Underhand Sect disciples were all dead now.

Dozens of blood pillars shot up into the air, dozens of human heads rolled on the floor.

Book 1, Chapter 3 – The Priest

Everything happened so suddenly, the three had yet to see exactly what the green light was, as the three green lights had already departed.

The heads that were severed by the green lights were still rolling in midair. Before the heads touched the ground, a bright light blinked from behind the passage, followed by a loud thunder bang that struck one's ears. All three of them trembled, their clothes were torn apart by a huge force. The force pushed them down and made them roll into the huge stone room at the end of the passage, making them spit out blood along the way.

Wu Wang's vision was sharp, he could barely see that what had just attacked them was a lightning bolt the size of an arm. The lightning bolt was both green and red, and about two to three meters long, but its power was equal to that of a small bomb. The three of them who were hit by the lightning, without any chance of resisting, they were sent rolling into the room.

Supporting himself with great effort as he stood up, Wu Wang shouted out fiercely and asked, "Who is that?!"

A chuck was heard from afar, then an appealing and silvery voice sounded out to them.

"All mortals envy the immortals, Green Lotus Root and Fiery Jujube is treated as food. The jade liquid nourishes the white tea, the success of the Water and Fire Pill shines upon the purple clouds."

Following the reading of the Daoist poem, a young Dao priest wearing a purple robe walked in arrogantly. On both his chest and his back the eight trigrams stitched with silver lining, and a gorgeous pattern filled his robe. Behind this young Daoist priest was eight middle aged priests dressed in green who followed closely. Each of them had their eyes pointing towards the skies, portraying an unparalleled arrogance.

It was as if in their minds, Wu Wang, Le Xiaobai and Wu Qi were just some ants the could simply kill with a squeeze, they're not really worth their attention.

Wu Qi focused his vision, he jumped up from where he laid and drew the Dragon Abyss sword out from its sheath, sending out a sword light and stabbing towards the heart of the priest in the purple robe.

"A rice sized pearl like you, still trying to shine!"

The purple robe priest had a scornful expression and a teasing smile. He casually pointed his finger, sending a bright white beam out from his sleeve. The white beam directly collided with the sword light that was unleashed with Wu Qi's full strength. A crystal clear impact sounded out, the Dragon Abyss sword was blown into pieces. Wu Qi felt as if he had been struck by lightning. His body trembled and he was sent flying far away by the white beam, hitting the ground with his head so that he lost all ability to move.

Wu Qi immediately felt half his body becoming numb. The white beam was only about one meter long, but it was covered with an extreme cold. When the Dragon Abyss sword collided with the white beam, it was like

hitting a huge mountain. The white beam didn't suffer any damage, but Wu Qi almost broke all his bones.

His inner vital energy was shattered by the white beam. His body felt like had broken into several pieces. Wu Qi laid on the floor without even the ability to move his toe.

Shangguan Ye came into the room while leading a group of Underhand Sect disciples behind him with a villainous smile on his face. Looking at Shangguan Ye and his arms that were moving without any problems, it was obvious that the inner vital energy and cultivation base that was destroyed by Wu Qi had now fully recovered, and the nerves that were cut were now fully recovered as well.

Wu Qi was startled, he was the one who personally carried out the sentence on Shangguan Ye, so of course he knew how serious the wound he caused was. Shangguan Ye who was supposed to lay on a sickbed had now fully recovered. Impossibly enough, the wounds on his nerves had been cured as well.

Shangguan Ye fiercely gazed at Wu Qi, he pointed his finger at him while grinding his teeth and said, "Little bastard, I told you, you would all soon die!"

Few of Shangguan Ye's trusted disciples walked over to Wu Qi's side with evil smiles on their faces, they started kicking and punching Wu Qi.

Wu Qi who was now able to move again protected his head with his hands, he stretched himself and let these men attack him. Without anyone noticing, he had quietly taken out the Underhand Sect's Sect

Elder token from the secret pocket on his belt. He used the muscles on his waist, thigh and leg like water and quietly hid the Sect Elder token in his boot, at the bottom of his feet.

This was almost an instinct to him.

When Wu Qi saw Shangguan Ye started walking towards the stone chamber, he started this action. When Shangguan Ye's trusted disciples started hitting him, he had managed to carefully hide the Sect Elder token inside his boot.

Sure enough, after Shangguan Ye shouted and scolded at Wu Qi, he immediately walked over to Wu Wang and started searching his body.

Wu Wang glared at the purple robed priest and said with a grin, "Shangguan Ye, are you blind?! Look, your father is only wearing boxers, why the fuck are you still touching me? What could I possibly hide on my body as I am now?!"

Shangguan Ye squeezed Wu Wang's neck, he roared out loud asking, "Sect Elder token?! Where is the token?!"

Wu Wang laughed out loud, he shook his head and said, "Sect Elder token? I hid it in Swiss Bank's safety vault!"

Shangguan Ye was obviously stunned by this. He stared at Wu Wang and shouted, "The Underhand Sect's rules states that the Sect Elder token must be with the Sect Elder at all time! This is the rule set down by the founding grandmaster, why would you hide it in a safety vault?!"

Wu Wang rolled his eyes, he glared at Shangguan Ye while laughing, “Your father can do whatever he wants! Not happy then you can kiss my ass!”

The purple robed priest swung his sleeve, and a clear ‘slap!’ sound appeared, he had slapped Wu Wang’s face from afar. Blood spilled out from Wu Wang’s face, the purple robed priests slap had almost crushed Wu Wang’s cheek bone. A big chunk of flesh was ripped off, and fresh blood poured out.

“Unruly mortal, unbelievable!”

The purple robed priest stared at Wu Wang sideways, coldly teasing him, “You’re going to die, how dare you be so stubborn and arrogant?! Hmph!”

Wu Wang spat out some blood, he stared at the purple robed priest with a grin, “Sir, what immortal are you? Unruly mortal? Hehe, we’re all mortals here, what kind of superior being do you think you are?”

The purple robed priest showed a face that was too lazy to respond to Wu Wang. He turned his head towards Shangguan Ye and ordered him with a stiff expression, “Since they put so much effort into finding this Dimensional Portal, there’s no need to torture them too much. Just let them die in peace.”

Shangguan Ye answered in a respectful manner, he threw Wu Wang down onto the floor and forcefully stepped on his stomach, destroyed all inner vital energy Wu Wang had cultivated for many years. Then he

pointed towards the purple robed priest and said with a sneer smile, “I’ll let you know this before you die, this is Little Priest Miao Yuan from the Green Mountain City, the last disciple of Elder Priest Zhiji Zi of the Green Mountain City!”

The purple robed priest put both his hands behind his back in a reserved manner, portraying a look of a man from another world. His eyes expressed extreme joy as he stared at the illogical item in the huge stone chamber beneath this mountain.

Wu Wang, Le Xiaobai and Wu Qi also looked at the illogical stuff in the chamber at the same time.

Right after the metal door was opened, the three of them discovered that the items in the chamber couldn’t be explained with common knowledge. From their experience and knowledge, they knew that they had discovered something really extraordinary.

Too bad things changed too fast. Shangguan Ye unexpectedly brought Priest Miao Yuan here, so Wu Qi and the rest didn’t have the time to study what exactly was in there, and now they were facing their doom. Faced with the miraculous abilities of Miao Yuan and the rest of the priests, they didn’t stand a chance at resisting.

It was unknown whether it was the nature or some human who made this. Underneath the mountain of Machu Picchu, someone excavated this sphere chamber that spanned almost a kilometer in diameter. This huge space stood on its own, its walls was smooth as mirrors, and it was hard to imagine that this sphere space was man-made. It is something that only technology that doesn’t yet exist could accomplish.

One the smooth and bright surface of the wall, hundreds of thousands thumb size pearls and gemstones were paved in. A variety of colors were shining brightly, forming a complicated star map on the wall of the mountain. When staring at this star map, as time goes by, the gem stones would shine brightly and make one feel as if this star map was quietly circulating. It was both amazing and unbelievable.

Under the colorful shine of the star map, an item that couldn't be explained nor understood was floating in midair.

360 pieces of fine white tallow jade was floating on top of it, forming a sphere shaped formation with approximately 300 meters in diameter. These jades with the length of about 4 meters and a width of about 2 meters, and about 50 centimeters thick were carved with numerous complicated symbols. In between these symbols, thousands of shining fist sized objects filled the gaps.

These huge tallow jades were floating in midair without any movement, occasionally some arm sized streams of light would shoot out from these jades and zap into other nearby jades.

At the center of all these jade there was a round golden platform. On the platform, numerous symbols were carved in as well, 360 shining gem stones the size of a human head were inlaid on the platform itself. An ancient aura was being emitted from this golden platform. When everyone looked at this golden platform, it felt like they were watching ancient history itself in front of them.

Wu Qi who was being beaten suddenly started laughing out loud and

said, “Teacher, we’ve found something incredible!”

Shangguan Ye walked towards him and forcefully stepped on his head. With a grin he said, “It is I, your father, who found this thing, it has nothing to do with you!”

Before he finished his words, Miao Yuan snorted coldly.

Shangguan Ye hurriedly altered his statement and said, “It is because of Priest Miao Yuan’s crafty plan that we were able to find this Dimensional Portal. All of you were nothing but chess pieces in the Priest’s hands, he used you all as if you were just mere tools! You even helped the Priest clear all those traps before this door!”

Bowing and smiling as he tried to flatter Miao Yuan, Shangguan Ye said, “All of this was planned by the Priest! Now you can all die here in peace.”

After listening to Shangguan Ye’s flatter, Miao Yuan showed a small smile. He shook his head proudly and said, “They are just some mortals. Being calculative with them is not needed with my status and dignity. Shangguan Ye, just let them be ghosts who can understand it all!”

Only after another round flattering, Shangguan Ye started proudly explaining the reason for everything that had happened to Wu Wang, Le Xiaobai and Wu Qi.

In faction, before Shangguan Ye joined the Underhand Sect, he had always leaned towards Miao Yuan, he had become his henchman long ago. Previously when Shangguan Ye had continuously stolen dozens of

rich families' treasures and heirloom, he had actually been following Miao Yuan's orders. Those rich families would never dream that their heirlooms, to a cultivator like Miao Yuan, were considered rare treasures.

That's right, Miao Yuan is a legendary cultivator, one of the cultivators who are chasing immortality, aiming to break through this realm and become an immortal.

Shangguan Ye was fighting for the Sect Elder position with Wu Wang but failed miserably, after that he immediately activated the communication crane talisman that Miao Yuan had given him, then he requested help from Miao Yuan. He was given a great miraculous pill and recovered his cultivation, also curing his nerves.

After kicking Wu Wang forcefully a few time, Shangguan Ye said with a grin, "If it wasn't for the priest's mercy after discovering that the golden plate in your hand held the clue that he was searching for, who would have let you come to Machu Picchu? Your dog head would already have been severed several months ago by a flying sword if he didn't show mercy!"

Miao Yuan was also searching for a clue on the golden plate?

Le Xiaobai who was being held hostage by some of Shangguan Ye's trusted disciples turned his head with great difficulty and glanced at the huge metal door.

Shangguan Ye gazed at Le Xiaobai, suddenly he started laughing and walking towards him, he fiercely punched Le Xiaobai in his stomach.

Le Xiaobai opened his mouth and spat out some blood mixed with small pieces of his internal organs. His body was incredibly weak, there was no way he could resist Shangguan Ye's fierce punch. This punch had taken away half of Le Xiaobai's life.

Glaring at Shangguan Ye who was releasing his anger on Wu Wang and the rest, Miao Yuan after some time said, "Alright, Shangguan Ye. You'll be the Sect Elder of the Underhand Sect after this."

Laughing in satisfaction, Miao Yuan spoke once again, "Teacher sent all the disciples of our sect out to search for this Dimensional Portal, but I'm the one who found it first! Not only did I find the clue, I also witnessed the Dimensional Portal itself!"

An emotional sigh left Miao Yuan's mouth, closed his eyes with a smile on his face, "The Green City Chief position is now in my hands!"

Pointing at Wu Wang and the other two, Miao Yuan said in a cold manner, "Just nice, the 'Grand Heavenly Circulation Positioning Talisman' requires the portal to be activated before it can provide a destination. Wouldn't it just be boring if the portal isn't activated?"

While instructing Shangguan Ye to place Wu Wang and the other two men onto the huge golden platform right in the middle of the portal, Miao Yuan started laughing out loud.

"Being able to die in this miraculous ancient portal, being killed by the nature's scary forces... nobodies like you should all be considered lucky!"

Still laughing, Miao Yuan shot a golden beam out from his sleeve, hitting the golden platform.

Book 1, Chapter 4 – Ancient Portal

The Great Universal Dimensional Portal, also called the Dimension Portal, is a legendary portal that was used by ancient immortals to travel between stars.

Without a specific protection talisman for the Great Universal Dimensional Portal, only an Earth Immortal with a perfect Nascent Soul, and those stronger than an Earth Immortal, would have the qualifications to use the Great Universal Dimensional Portal. The result of someone underneath the Earth Immortal realm using this portal would be them getting shredded to pieces by the humongous suction force between the stars.

Not only would their bodies be ripped apart, even their souls would vanish into the void.

Soul disintegration; forever unable to reincarnate. This was the most tragic way to die in the world.

Miao Yuan was proudly looking at Wu Wang while explaining the mysterious features of the Great Universal Dimensional Portal. He kept describing to the three the huge amount of pain they would experience when ripped apart by the ancient portal, as well as the tragic scene of their souls and bodies being torn apart.

Le Xiaobai squinted his eyes. His eyeballs rolled around, he was trying to calculate the chances of them turning this situation around.

But no matter how much Le Xiaobai thought about it and calculated, faced with the immortal abilities of Miao Yuan, every plan he could think of would just be a waste of time.

Wu Qi stared at Miao Yuan while grinding his teeth. Word by word he swore, “If I am able to survive this day, I will kill everyone in your sect in the future!”

Miao Yuan wasn’t bothered by what Wu Qi said. Survive? How could that be possible? The Great Universal Dimensional Portal wasn’t some fake object. Either you were protected by the portal protection talisman, or you were an Earth Immortal with a perfect nascent soul. If you weren’t any of those, then you would without a doubt be ripped apart by the portal, there was no other possibility.

As for Wu Wang, he was staring at Shangguan Ye with a grin, “Sect Elder Token, do you not want it anymore? If you vow that you’ll let Wu Qi and Xiaobai go, I’ll give you the token!”

Shangguan Ye turned his head with a snort, then he teased, “The Underhand Sect is already mine, what’s the point of having a token? I’ve never really care about it. With it, I’m the Sect Elder. Without it, I’m still the Sect Elder.

Patting his own shoulders in a mocking manner, Shangguan Ye stared at Wu Wang with a sincere look and said, “I don’t possess those legendary qi meridians. The old story about the token’s function wouldn’t work on me, so why would I let go of two of my enemies just for something that is impossible?”

Wu Wang let out a long sigh and shook his head helplessly.

The Great Universal Dimensional Portal had been activated. 360 jade plates were moving in circles around the golden platform, and streams of light were being shot out from them, filling the huge sphere shaped space with dazzling lights. Massive pressure was being emitted from the portal, forcing Shangguan Ye and the other disciples of the Underhand Sect to keep moving back. Only Miao Yuan and the eight other priests were able to withstand the pressure, with great effort.

[TL: Actually, a more accurate translation would be daoists. I chose priests last chapter, as it sounded better, but I forgot to include a TL note.]

When the golden platform unleashed a layer of golden light, it immediately covered Wu Wang and the other two. A bright, golden talisman appeared in one of Miao Yuan's hands. He then aimed it at the Great Universal Dimensional Portal.

Seemingly being able to sense Wu Wang and the rest's puzzled expressions, Miao Yuan started explaining the origin of this talisman with a smile.

"Several months ago, in the grand ancestral worship ceremony of the Green Mountain Sect, a few legendary patriarchs who had entered the immortal realm awarded some cultivation scrolls. At the back of those scrolls there were nine Grand Heavenly Positioning Talismans."

"The patriarchs of the Green Mountain Sect were told that some evil demons had constructed a Great Universal Dimensional Portal in the mortal realm with the intentions of using it to travel freely between the

mortal realm and the demon realm. This led to conspiracy theories which could cause trouble for the immortals. Therefore, they requested the disciples of the mortal realm to find out where this portal was, and then use the Grand Heavenly Positioning Talismans to find out where it led."

"As long as they could find the destination of the portal, the patriarchs of the Green Mountain Sect would strike that destination with full force, destroying all possibilities of a disaster."

"Recorded within the Grand Heavenly Positioning Talismans, is the positions of all the stars in the universee were recorded. As long as the demons activated the it, the positioning talismans would be able to find the portal's final destination and transmit that position to the patriarchs of the Green Mountain Sect."

Wu Qi carefully listened to Miao Yuan's explanation. The patriarchs of the Green Mountain Sect were now his enemies.

As for Le Xiaobai, he was looking at Miao Yuan with surprise, "Immortals are real? Devils and demons are real? Are you sure the things you obtained in the worship ceremony weren't just random objects made by a group of fake priests suffering from hysteria?"

Miao Yuan started boiling with rage, he raised his hand up high while still holding onto the glowing Grand Heavenly Positioning Talisman; he stared at Le Xiaobai and scolded, "Ridiculous! Among the patriarchs of the Green Mountain Sect, of course there's someone who has broken through this realm and entered the immortal realm! Hysteria? Bullshit! What kind of hysterical disorders can construct this Great Universal Dimensional Portal?"

Le Xiaobai shut his mouth. He stared at the jade plates that were circulating around him with great speed, he couldn't find any words to say.

The portal was circulating with great speed, and the pressure from the surroundings was becoming greater. Every single bone in the bodies of the three were making cracking sounds. The Grand Universal Dimensional Portal really deserved its reputation. It was the transportation tool of immortals, not something a mortal could withstand. This was especially true for the weakest one among the three, Le Xiaobai. He began to bleed from all orifices, and his body had lost all its strength, so he could only lay on the platform immobile.

Miao Yuan smiled scornfully. This was only the initial pressure they would feel when the portal started its launch. When the portal started the transmitting process, that's the time when Le Xiaobai and the other two's soul would start disintegrating.

Shangguan Ye looked at Le Xiaobai who was bleeding from all orifices. He felt joyful seeing this.

This was the little peacock who had planned everything for Wu Wang. He helped Wu Wang form a huge power network in the Underhand Sect in just a few years. He even helped him overtake Shangguan Ye who was the son of the previous Sect Elder. If it wasn't for Le Xiaobai, Shangguan Ye believed that he could have fought with Wu Wang without losing so terribly those few months back. He had lost everything he had to fight back.

Luckily, he had leaned towards the right man.

Glancing respectfully at the trembling Miao Yuan, Shangguan Ye breathed a sigh of relief.

After getting rid of Wu Wang and the other two, the Underhand Sect would be in his hands. Although Shangguan Ye said that he didn't care about the Sect Elder Token, once everything here came to an end, he would go to the Swiss Bank's safety vault and find that token. Generations of Underhand Sect Elders had passed the message down verbally, there was a big secret within the token itself. If he really gave up on the token, then he wouldn't be able content at all.

But too bad, the requirements for those big sects are too strict.

Shangguan Ye furrowed his brows in exasperation.

Miao Yuan held onto the Great Heavenly Positioning Talisman and sent all his vital energy into it. A tiny golden line shot out from the talisman and strongly latchedtangled itself onto the Great Dimensional Universal Portal's golden platform. The packed symbols on the platform started glowing, along with the Great Heavenly Positioning Talisman. Humongous energy waves were rippling like tidal waves. Except for Miao Yuan, all the others were forced down onto the floor, unable to move.

Wu Wang and the other two who were being constrained within the portal by the massive pressure couldn't even lift a finger.

Sensing the horrifying massive pressure surrounding them, Wu Wang

let out a long sigh.

"Shangguan Ye, this time, you've won!"

Shangguan Ye who was also being pressed down on the floor started laughing out without control. Without stopping his laugh he said, "Save your breath, I already know that I've won!"

Tilting his head upwards with pride, Shangguan Ye said with a cold voice, "The Underhand Sect is mine! Wu Wang, you can't win against me!"

Laying on top of the golden platform, Wu Wang stared at Shangguan Ye from high up with a grin, "I never really had the Underhand Sect in my mind. If it wasn't for my mission to try my best to become the top management of the Underhand Sect, there would be no point in fighting with you!"

Shangguan Ye and all the other Underhand Sect disciples widened their mouths, they were all startled.

While breathing out a sigh of relief, Wu Wang mumbled to himself, "Hiding for so many years, I can finally breathe out a sigh of relief."

Staring at Shangguan Ye who was still startled, Wu Wang grinned and said, "I'll tell you honestly, I'm an undercover agent. My mission was to take control of the Underhand Sect. With the abilities of the Underhand Sect, you guys should have heard about 'Collecting Heaven', right? I was sent by them!"

[TL: I'm not too sure about Collecting Heaven... I might change it in the future, if it appears in future chapters.]

Shangguan Ye stared at Wu Wang blankly, suddenly he scolded, "Damn you, you motherfucker! You, you're a spy!"

Wu Wang grinned and spoke as if he didn't care, "Le Xiaobai joined the Underhand Sect in order to pursue excitement. Therefore, if he was killed, I wouldn't feel any pain at all."

Le Xiaobai gazed at Wu Wang ruefully and said with a sad voice, "Brother Wu, don't talk like that!"

Wu Wang didn't care about Le Xiaobai's words, he continued saying, "But for Wu Qi, I'm the one who dragged him into the Underhand Sect. The reason why I dragged him into the sect is because I discovered that it is highly possible that he possesses the Underhand Sect's legendary Stealing Heavens Arteries. Therefore, I took him in as my disciple. And therefore, I will be the one responsible for his life!"

Glaring at Miao Yuan who was maintaining the Great Heavenly Positioning Talisman with all his effort, Wu Wang said with a strange smile, "Wu Qi is my disciple, therefore, if you people want to kill him, I will avenge him at any cost!"

Clenching his teeth together, Wu Wang bit off his tongue with all his strength.

The massive pressure from the portal became even more intense. Like a

fountain, the blood in Wu Wang's mouth sprayed out for dozens of meters.

Losing such a huge amount of blood, Wu Wang's life was leaving with great speed. His heart instantly stopped beating.

A bright eye piercing light suddenly exploded out from the Grand Universal Dimensional Portal, and the portal was finally activated. Wu Wang and the other two were going to be transported soon. At the same time, The Great Heavenly Positioning Talisman in Miao Yuan's hand also started emitting an eye catching golden light. The positioning of the final destination was almost complete.

Right at this crucial timing, Wu Wang's left leg suddenly exploded. The rapid force of the explosion swept across, immediately causing abnormality in the Grand Universal Dimensional Portal.

The jade plates were starting to break piece by piece, and the twisting energy of the space was turning into a golden platform in a dough shape.

The self defense mechanism of the portal was instantly destroyed, and the humongous tidal energy within the Grand Universal Dimensional Portal was starting to explode uncontrollably.

An eye catching pillar of light shot up into the sky from the middle of Machu Picchu, instantly spreading across the entire area.

A giant mushroom cloud billowed into the sky from underneath Machu Picchu together with the sound of an incredibly loud explosion. A few

nearby hills were instantly turned into ashes at the same time.

The massive explosion swept across the whole area, hills were collapsing, rivers running dry, and trees breaking from their trunks and flying high up into the air.

The ground was shaking, and even the clouds were sent flying. The landscape around Machu Picchu was moving up and down like ripples in water, huge trenches were appearing everywhere, and a few hills were even swallowed by the trenches, sinking deep into the earth.

After a long time when everything returned to its original peaceful state, Machu Picchu had disappeared.

What was left on the spot where Machu Picchu used to be was a huge crater spreading hundreds of miles, with a depth of over thirty miles.

Book 1, Chapter 5 – Inheritance

It seemed like a single second, but it also seemed like a whole lifetime.

Wu Qi stared at Miao Yuan and Shangguan Ye outside of the Grand Universal Dimensional Portal, then the portal suddenly exploded.

Wu Wang's left leg had suddenly exploded, and was the reason behind this massive explosion. The explosion had disturbed the Grand Universal Dimensional Portal's energy path, making the massive amount of energy started clashing into each other. And just like the chain reactions of a nuclear reactor, the terrifying explosion had happened just like that.

In an instant, not even a fraction of a millisecond, the Grand Universal Dimension Portal with its full power teleported Wu Qi, Le Xiaobai and Wu Wang away. The humongous explosion had destroyed a few hundred kilometers of the mountain range surrounding Machu Picchu, but it had never caused any damage to these three men.

At that moment, uncountable lights were blinking in front of Wu Qi's eyes, as if he had just broken through a thing bubble wall, and then suddenly presented a starry glittering sky. This starry sky was completely different from what he was used to seeing on earth, the stars he was seeing right now were extremely huge, and were immersed in a bright light and were covered in a luxurious golden color. Numerous stars were hanging in the far sky, but it seemed like they were just right in front of his eyes. Extremely massive.

Countless stars turned into streams of light and flew far away, and the humongous pressure of these stars started pushing in like crazy from all

direction-

Wu Wang who had died long ago when his left leg exploded into a mess, his body started blinking a few times, then he blew up into a thousand pieces by the pressure. Even Le Xiaobai could only let out a painful cry before his weak body exploded as well. Both of them had become tiny energy particles. Two strange rainbow colored lights shot out from their bodies, but those lights were crushed into ashes by the pressure as well.

When Wu Qi saw the two bright lights, he instinctively knew that these were Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai's souls.

When their souls were crushed into ashes and turned into countless rainbow colored particles, Wu Qi's tears started pouring out uncontrollably, then he started screaming out hysterically.

Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai, one is his teacher and the other is his best friend. It was them who brought Wu Qi out from the terrifying parts of Africa, it was them who gave Wi Qi all his skills and abilities, and it was them who provided Wu QI with the strength to survive in this world. Right now, both of them were torn apart right in front of him, and their souls were disintegrated. They died in the most tragic way possible.

"Teacher!"

"Xiaobai!"

The corner of Wu Qi's eyes were breaking, huge amounts of blood were

pouring out.

The humongous pressure crushed Wu Qi's tears and blood, instantly turning it into ashes, then it continued working on him.

The cloud of death was hovering above him, Wu Qi's heart suddenly stopped beating. Wu QI opened his mouth, as if he could fell the messenger of death breathing out coldly right in front of him. It seems like he had seen the scene of himself being crushed to ashes just like Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai, even his soul being completely disintegrated.

Followed by a clear cracking sound, Wu Qi's clothes shattered. Underneath the intense pressure, his skin started tearing apart, and huge amounts of blood flooded out from his body.

Right at this moment, a soft but solid cold breeze suddenly emerged from the bottom of Wu Qi's feet. The Underhand Sect's Sect Elder Token that was hidden by Wu Qi underneath his feet came into contact with Wu Qi's blood, then it suddenly burst out with a bright, water blue amber.

A somewhat soft but solid cold breeze was unleashed from the token itself, and it instantly started circulating around Wu Qi's body.

The cold breeze soon circulated around every part of Wu Qi's body and gathered together in both of Wu Qi's arms. Wu Qi's arms felt like they were being soaked in freezing water, causing him to started unstoppably start trembling. He was unable to move either of his arms, as they were both frozen by the cold breeze.

The cold breeze continued penetrating into Wu Qi's arms bit by bit, and finally, the Underhand Sect's Sect Elder Token quietly shattered into ashes. A bucket sized watery blue light shot out from the token, and without making a single noise, it entered Wu Qi's body. A sigh of relief sounded out within the thin air, it was hollow like a ghostly sigh.

A powerful suction force emerged from within Wu Qi's body, the fragments of Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai's souls were absorbed into Wu Qi's body.

Suddenly, from Wu Qi's frozen boot, a bright blue light burst out. He felt a shock in his head, then he lost all consciousness.

In a sober state, Wu Qi could only feel his body floating in a dark space. Right in front of him, a fading human figure stared at him from afar.

A soft sigh, Wu Qi seemed like he was hearing that human figure saying something.

"The Heavens haven't annihilated my race! Finally I've found the 'Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries', my way of cultivation has found its successor at last!"

Some crystal clear transparent symbols emitting a beautiful and mysterious rainbow colored light with ancient writing appeared in the middle of the dark space. That human figure was reading the script loudly and clearly. For each word he read, another rainbow colored writing appeared in midair.

The first symbol that appeared in front of Wu Qi was the ‘Scroll of Stealing’.

“The dao can be stolen, but ordinary daos can’t!”

“In my way of life, there’s much in this universe but humans are insufficient by nature, we’ll take the dao of this universe and supply our insufficiency! When someone has too much while we are insufficient, then we will take their excess and supply our own insufficiency!”

“All rivers run into the sea, only with tolerance can one be great; only with the accumulation of sand, there will be a great mountain; gather every single drop of water, then you’ll have a vast ocean!”

“Therefore there is nothing in this world, we cannot take it; we cannot steal it!”

A few hundred thousand symbols, read out word by word by that human figure. The symbols that were presented in midair, although Wu Qi couldn’t see them clearly, he could remember them. Every single symbol had merged with his soul, there was no way he could forget them.

The Great Universal Dimensional Portal was pushing Wu Qi forwards through this void space with great speed. He was traveling an unknown amount of distance with every single moment, breaking through numerous natural or man-made barriers in the void space. The watery blue light was protecting Wu Qi, and the intense cold energy was washing Wu Qi’s body all over. Lots of dirt and waste poured out from every single pore in Wu Qi’s body, then it was crushed and turned into

ashes by the surrounding pressure.

With both of Wu Qi's arms as the core, followed by the reading of that human figure, the cold energy slowly started circulating in his body. The 'Scroll of Stealing' begun with a cultivation skill called 'The Seven Foundation Establishments – Chapter Source of Water', it slowly begun laying down the foundation within Wu Qi's body.

Wu Qi was breathing deeply. Followed by the 'Source of Water' cultivation skill, it started circulating the blue energy within his body.

As time went by, the cultivation of 'Source of Water' entered into its advanced stage. Wu Qi's body actually produced the same sound as the tidal wave sound of a flowing river.

In Wu Qi's mind, the once dark and empty Divine Sense had started emitting watery reflections, it seemed like a huge amount of water was raging within his divine sense. The fading human figure was floating on top of the raging water while reading out the complicated and advanced chapters of the 'Scroll of Stealing' all together for Wu Qi.

After that came a long silence. The human figure stared at Wu Qi quietly, then he suddenly breathed out a long sigh.

"Entering my sect, this is your fate, but also your misfortune. What happens in the future, you'll decide for yourself. If it is fortune, don't thank me; if it is misfortune, don't blame me!"

"My way of cultivation can only be passed to one person each

generation. If you're safe for the rest of your life, that'll be good. If you are dying, try your best to pass my way of cultivation away!"

Shaking his head, the human figure suddenly tilted his head upwards and started laughing, then he casually hit Wu Qi's head with his palm.

While trembling, Wu Qi suddenly woke up and opened his eyes.

The watery blue energy that was protecting his body had been completely absorbed by him, it transformed into an endless tidal wave floating in both his arms. The massive pressure from the surrounding stars were pressing him and making his bones produce cracking sounds. It looks like his body wouldn't be able to withstand the pressure any longer, it was going to be crushed into pieces.

A fading mist emerged from the middle of Wu Qi's brows, then it turned into that human figure Wu Qi had seen in his Divine Sense.

"What an unlucky kid!"

This fading human figure with an unclear face let out a strangle laugh, then he suddenly exploded.

A large amount of fog then covered Wu Qi's body and brought him forwards with great speed. The speed he was currently travelling was at least a few thousand times faster than the speed the Great Universal Dimensional Portal had made him travel.

Wu Qi couldn't withstand this sudden increase of terrifying speed, his

skin was breaking off bit by bit. He rolled his eyes and fainted yet again.

The mist was fading and was getting thinner and thinner, it looks like it was going to soon disappear.

Just right before the mist finally disappeared, a dull thunder strike was unleashed from the fading mist; it hit and shattered the void space.

Wu Qi who had wounds all over his body and was continuous bleeding flew into the shattered space in a circular motion.

The mist finally disappeared, and the only thing left in the void space was a soft, long sigh.

“My disciple, keep on living!”

Book 1, Chapter 6 – The Villagers

This was a vast forest. Standing on top of the hill and looking around, surrounded by the darkness of the night, there was only an endless amount of gigantic trees. A few night birds were suddenly scared away by something unknown, the creatures hiding in the shadows of the dark forest let out some weird cries, causing the dark forest to become even more horrifying.

Rapid friction in the grass sounded out, an almost 5 meter long black tiger leapt out from the grass in panic.

Before the tiger could land its feet on the ground, the air in front of it suddenly became twisted. Wu Qi whose body was covered in burns and was covered in a thick layer of blood fell down heavily and smashed into the ground in front of the black tiger. The wild black tiger swung its palm, smashing towards Wu Qi's head out of instinct. The huge tiger palm carried a fierce wind with it, and the force was certainly powerful enough shatter a huge rock.

A few loud shouts sounded out from behind some trees, 5-6 arrows penetrating through the air with a tearing sound approached its target with great speed.

The grass was shaking once again. Three animals that looked like deer's, but had a single horn growing out from the middle of their heads were carrying three strong men wearing woven clothes, and they were approaching the black tiger with great speed.

The black tiger could hear the approaching arrows. Before it had the

time to strike Wu Qi's skull, it hurriedly twisted its waist, then its huge body hastily swayed to the side, the arrows were close, but they missed. A few bright stars which glowing in a bizarre amber was seen on the black tiger's fur. The sharp arrow heads only brought a few strands of hair away from its body.

Before the scared black tiger could touch the ground once again, the three strong men controlled their mounts and rushed over to its back with great speed.

A thick pure steel pike with a diameter resembling a bowl was stabbed underneath the black tiger at the right timing. The man holding this steel pike took advantage of his speed and pushed the pike with all his strength. The black tiger which weighed at least one to two thousand kilos was pushed to the side slightly by the force.

After losing its balance in midair, the black tiger couldn't remain balanced when it landed. It rolled uncontrollably upon landing.

Another two men shouted with high pitched cheers, they were howling rudely. They struck their blade and sword separately towards the black tiger's neck. The black tiger who could only barely stand had no chance of evading these attacks. The blade and sword hit the left and right side of its neck. In this dark forest, two streams of blood shot up into the air.

The black tiger cried out in despair. It twisted its waist with all its strength, and then its gigantic tail swung out together with the fierce wind. The men who were carrying weapons simply didn't have the time to evade it, the tail collided with their chests and sent them flying 7-8 meters away.

The sound of bones breaking was heard, the man who was hit spat out some blood while flying through the air. He fell down onto the ground and rolled a few times, he was unable to stand back up.

The man who just pushed the black tiger roared out in anger. He struck his steel pike like a deadly python and forcefully impaled it into the black tiger's neck.

A few more arrows approached from behind and impaled the black tiger's fat round butt. The arrow heads were fed with a strong anesthetic, so after suffering from a few serious wounds, the black tiger cramped up and crawled onto the ground, its body finally turned stiff.

Few of the men riding on those weird deer's carried their strong bows in their hands and slowly walked out from the grass, everyone were happily cheering.

The man who was carrying the steel pike put down his weapon and jumped down from his mount. He pulled his companion who had been struck by the tiger's tail and put him close to the tiger neck that was still bleeding. The wounded man hurriedly opened his mouth and swallowed the tiger's blood. Not long after this, to one's surprise, he could stand up and support his body on his own.

The men cheered again. Right at this moment, a man who carried a strong bow finally discovered Wu Qi who was laying naked on the ground.

A few men came closer to Wu Qi, then they wiped off the thick blood on

Wu Qi's chest and looked at the cracked skin on his chest. Nodding their heads and mumbling softly, they dragged Wu Qi to the side of the tiger. They opened his mouth and fed him with the tiger's blood until his stomach became full.

After rudely throwing Wu Qi onto a mount like a worn-out sack, a few of the men chopped some tree branches in high spirit, then they made a stretcher and carried the huge tiger while singing an unknown tune. They ventured into the mountain forest happily.

Wu Qi woke up from his coma, he was now laying on a bed stinking of wild animals.

This was a wooden house about that was only a few meters wide. It was built from some wide tree trunks. The bark on the tree trunks were still there, and some of the tree trunks with a strong will to live had even grown some new leaves on it, but no one really cared.

Inside the house, next to a wooden table and a few round tree stumps that were being used as chairs, there was only a stone bed which Wu Qi was currently resting on. The stone bed was made from mountain rock and was covered in dozens of beast skins. The technology used to process these beast skins was not comparable to regular standards, therefore, these skins still carried the body odor of some beasts. Tiger, wild bear, leopard, all sorts of wild animals. There were even some animal skins that Wu Qi was unable to recognize.

Closing his eyes and taking a deep breath, a powerful yet soft and tender energy appeared. Within the 'Water Arteries' of his 'Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries', which were located in in both his arms, the energy instantly circulated all over his body. He focused his mind and watched

internally, Wu Qi could feel the thick and strong arteries in his body glowing in a watery blue amber.

'The Seven Foundation Establishments – Chapter Source of Water', the way of circulating the internal energy in his body felt so 'familiar'.

Tears dropped down from Wu Qi's eyes, his body trembled violently, and he almost cried out loud.

In the Great Universal Dimension Portal's transmitting process, Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai's bodies had turned into ashes. Their souls were even disintegrated into tiny soul fragments. When the mysterious human figure was passing the 'Scroll of Stealing' to him, all these soul fragments had rushed into Wu Qi's Divine Sense and merged with his soul.

Reading through all the extra memories and knowledge in his soul, blood suddenly started bleeding out from Wu Qi's lip.

All of Wu Wang's and Le Xiaobai's experiences and knowledge had now merged with Wu Qi's soul and become part of it.

He had obtained all of Wu Wang's combat knowledge and combat willpower, as well as all his combat experience and all sorts of weird experiences. He had also obtained Le Xiaobai's insane knowledge, as well as his shocking memories and amazing comprehension ability.

Scroll of Stealing, Scroll of Stealing, when someone has too much while we are insufficient, then we will take their excess and supply our own insufficiency! The first time he cultivated the Scroll of Stealing, the

biggest benefit Wu Qi had gained was from his most respected teacher and his best friend! This was the same as Wu Qi swallowing Wu Wang's and Le Xiaobai's souls while they were still alive. How could he not be sad, how could he not be in pain?

[TL: Author writes Scroll of Stealing twice.]

Wu Wang's left leg exploding, Wu Qi could now understand why it did.

Before he went undercover in the Underhand Sect, Wu Wang's left leg had been implanted with a powerful metal hydrogen bomb. The bomb was connected to Wu Wang's life, so when Wu Wang's life ended, when his heart stopped beating, the bomb would explode.

Knowing that after entering the Great Universal Dimensional Portal there would be no way for the three of them to survive, Wu Wang committed suicide and caused the bomb in his left leg to explode. This resulted in a chain reaction with the Great Universal Dimensional Portal, which then created an explosion large enough to turn Miao Yuan and Shangguan Ye into ashes.

"Teacher, teacher!"

"And Le Xiaobai, how come you all just died like that?!"

Wu Qi curled up his body and suddenly started crying out loud. Blood and tears was splashing around, his body was trembling and cramping violently.

No matter how many things he had accomplished in the Underhand

Sect, how many incidents he had experienced, he was still a teenager.

The teacher who gave him a new life was now dead. The best friend who was like his brother was dead as well. The young men from the Greedy Wolf Group whom he had spent so many years together with were all killed. He was trapped in the Great Universal Dimensional Portal and was sent to an unknown place. Wu Qi felt like a kite that had its line cut, it had lost all direction and just floating around. He had lost all target.

Just when Wu Qi was crying in pain, the house's wooden door was kicked open by someone. A muscular man whose height was definitely greater than 2 meters came in. He placed a clay bowl as big as a washbasin onto the table ferociously. This ripped muscular man with black hair all over his face and chest roared fiercely, "Man, are you man or woman?! Cry for what?! What are you crying for?!"

The muscular man's voice was awful and rough, and the words he used were rude as well. It carried a thick local accent.

Wu Qi by himself couldn't understand what this muscular man was saying, but luckily he had merged with all the memories and experiences of Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai. Wu Wang had seen a lot, and he had almost traveled all over the world. As for Le Xiaobai, he was insanely intelligent, all the languages of the world, including the local dialects of those African tribes, he had almost learned them all.

Therefore, Wu Qi was able to understand what this muscular man was saying.

The muscular man's accent resembled the local dialect of those from North East of Hebei, but it had more of a native slang. When Wu Wang was training in a remote village within some mountains, the old folks in that village spoke almost the same way as this man.

Wiping away the blood and tears on his eyes, Wu Qi stood up and bowed towards the man.

"Thank you for saving my life. What uncle said is right, men shouldn't cry."

After being shouted at by that man, Wu Qi suddenly realized; what is the point of crying, and is there a need to cry? If Miao Yuan and Shangguan Ye aren't dead, then he can just cultivate with all his effort and find a way to return and get revenge. If they're dead, then he will just destroy the Green Mountain Sect and avenge Wu Wang, Le Xiaobai and the Greedy Wolf Group.

The willpower that Wu Qi inherited from Wu Wang was now showing a huge effect. Wu Qi sopped his crying and immediately made up his mind.

The tender weakness in his body disappeared, and a killing intent silently replaced it.

The muscular man nodded his head in approval. He pointed towards the big clay bowl on the table and smiled, "This is my man! Hey, I prepared a bowl of tiger meat for you! Finish it fast and restore your energy. The meat of the Illuminate Tiger helps man regain his strength, helps woman stimulate milk production, this is the best!"

Then he stopped for a while, the muscular man suddenly rolled his eyes and pointed ferociously at Wu Qi and said, “What did you just call me? Uncle? Do I look that old? I’m only 14 this year, and you’re calling me uncle? You, do I look that old?”

Only 14?

Wu Qi looked at the almost two meter tall muscular man with the ripped body, he looked at the black hair on his face, and then he looked at rough body. Is this someone who is supposed to be a 14 year old teenager?

But, maybe, the calculation of age in here is different from what is he familiar with?

Organizing his thoughts, Wu Qi respectfully held his fist towards the muscular man and said, “It was Wu Qi being rude. Little brother, thank you again for saving me!”

The little brother whose face was filled with black hair started laughing out loud. He grabbed two woven clothes from his beast skin bag and gave them to Wu Qi. With a smile he said, “Little brother, I like how you call me that! Eat that meat fast, our elders have something to ask you!”

Shaking his head with a pleased expression, the man left Wu Qi. He twisted his butt and walked out from the wooden house.

Wu Qi stared blankly at that huge clay bowl on the table. It looked like

there was at least 2,5kg of tiger meat in the bowl. He furrowed his brows slightly.

After breathing out a long sigh, he reluctantly ate a few chunks of the rough tiger meat and drank two mouthfuls of the soup to ease his thirst, then he walked out from the wooden house.

A village with a beautiful landscape presented itself in front of Wu Qi.

Chapter 7 – The Evil Barbarians

Standing in front of the wooden house and looking into the distance, a few miles from here there was a river with billowing waves.

The river was almost a hundred meters wide, and there was a bridge floating on top of the river. On the other side of the bridge there was a dirt path leading into the deep forest, leading into an unknown destination. On this side of the bridge, there were a few archer towers made from wood and dirt standing solid. The bridge that was dozens of meters away from the riverbank had two leather straps on it; this was a suspension bridge.

On the other side of the bridge, there was a green mountain that resembled a natural barrier. Two mountain ridges extended like two long arms gently hugging on a flat land spanning dozens of miles. The mountain landscape was cliffy, and underneath the gigantic trees, there was fully-grown wild grass with poison sticks. Even a mouse could not get past this unharmed.

A natural green river was in front, and behind there was a huge green mountain. This small piece of land had fertile soil with both grass and trees growing. Two small streams flowed across the land; this was indeed a rich land suitable for homes. Not far away from the wooden house where Wu Qi had slept, there was a few hundred loosely built wooden houses both big and small, surrounded by trees. In between these houses there were farmlands spread evenly. A few dogs were playfully chasing the deer-like animal with a single horn on its head.

The man who delivered food and clothes to Wu Qi was squatting in

front of a red flower bush not far from the house, digging a white tree root while puffing hard. When he heard the sound Wu Qi made when he came out from the house, the man hastily put the tree root into the beast skin bag tied onto his waist, then he turned around and smiled at Wu Qi.

"Red Flower Cane, it is used specifically to cure all kinds of internal wounds, and it helps women who have lost too much blood. Hehe, looks like brother won't need this."

Wu Qi nodded his head thankfully, and then he asked, "What is little brother's great name? Wu Qi wishes to thank you for saving my life."

The ripped man was startled for a moment, and then he suddenly smiled, "Wu Qi? That name sure is weird. Great name? You are ruining my appetite by speaking like a book. My name is Doggie. Great name, I do not have a great name yet. When I become an adult at 16, I'll let the elder give me a name!"

Walking towards Wu Qi, he slapped Wu Qi with some force, and then he dragged him to the front of the village, towards the direction of the suspension bridge.

While Doggie was walking, he kept boasting about the night before yesterday and the miraculous effect of the illuminate tiger's blood that his dad had fed Wu Qi. According to his words, the blood of the illuminate tiger could bring the dead back to life, it could cure all kinds of diseases and wound. It was simply an almighty medicine.

Wu Qi just smiled while listening to Doggie's boasting. He looked up and down at the surrounding scenery while making some judgments in

his mind quietly.

The level of productivity here was not high; it could even be described as low. All the men here were full of strength. He saw a few women who went to carry water from the river, the buckets they carried had a diameter of more than one meter, and it was the size of about two small water urns.

Everyone here were equipped with all sorts. A group of kids was practicing skills on a small piece of flat land in the middle of the village. The weapons in their hands were real and sharp. Looking at the size of the blades and pikes, it seemed weigh at least 20-30 kg, and this group of kids who were only about 7-8 years old could swing these weapons as if they were nothing.

After some quick thinking, Wu Qi quietly circulated a skill found within the 'Chapter Source of Water', and then he injected the Innate Water Energy into his eyes. A thin layer of blue amber immediately covered both eyes. Looking at those kids who were practicing with pikes and blades once again, to Wu Qi's surprise, these children's bodies was filled with qi and blood, as well as some pretty strong internal energy that was circulating within their bodies.

These kids were in theory able compare with the elite members of the Underhand Sect's Greedy Wolf Group. The internal energy within their body is worth at least 3 to 5 years of hard practice.

Wu Qi suddenly gasped; he discovered that the thickness of the natural energies contained within the air was incredible.

The ‘Scroll of Stealing’ covers almost everything. Within it was an endless amount of profound content. There was also a section about natural energies highlighted within the ‘Scroll of Stealing’. Natural energy is the foundation for all cultivators; the higher level its thickness, the more benefits for the cultivator.

The natural energies on Earth was long gone because of the modern industries’ mass productions of items, Earth was just like a wasteland of natural energies.

[TL: Earth, as in planet he lived on previously]

As for this little mountain village, the thickness of the natural energies within this small piece of land was almost at the same level as those marvelous realms described in the ‘Scroll of Stealing’¨. No wonder all the kids here possess so much internal energy, and no wonder why Doggie standing beside him could have such a muscular body and grow so ripped.

A land where the natural energies are rich, even a piece of potato would grow bigger and sweeter than other places, same goes for humans!

Along the way, as if Doggie was famous within the village, many villagers waved and greeted him.

Those who are older than him would just call him Doggie; those who were same age as him, they would call him brother Doggie; those who were young would just call him uncle Doggie with respect. Wu Qi saw a few teenage girls who were quite pretty. These girls shyly greeted Doggie with blushed faces.

The land was fertile, the natural energies were rich, and the landscape was amazing. This really was a perfect place to live. Although the men who live here were tall and ripped like Doggie, those teenage girls were all gentle and pretty, it almost seemed like you could squeeze water out from their faces.

Wu Qi stared at those teenage girls; he could not help but melt away a little. This kind of charm and elegant natural beauty was something he had never seen before.

Retracting the Innate Water Energy from his eyes, Wu Qi shook his head. Now is not the time to concern about the beautiful teenage girls, it was time to find out where he was right now.

Following Doggie and walking all the way to the village entrance that was located at the end of the suspension bridge, Wu Qi saw a few old men carrying sticks in their hands and leading a group of men while scolding and beating those who were rolling on the ground.

Those men all had bodies similar to Doggie, they are men with shoulders strong enough to carry horses, beating and scolding people is normal for them. Those old men who were carrying sticks in their hands, they were so old that their bodies were bending like bows, but they were still as nimble as squirrels. They used the sticks to scold and beat the men laying on the ground like mad men. A very astonishing sight.

Wu Qi and Doggie walked close to these people. As if they had just finished releasing their anger, an old man coughed and struck the group forcefully with his stick once again, and then he let out a high-pitched

roar.

A few ripped men swiftly dragged the men from the group up and used a dagger in their hands to cut the throats of these men in a neat manner.

Blood splashed out, and a few of the men were trembling and making awful sounds. The villagers pitched in and grabbed some ropes, and then they hanged these men whom were still bleeding out from their necks high up on the archery tower in front of the bridge.

Aside from these few men who were still screaming and bleeding, underneath the archery tower there was still hanging over 30 corpses.

These corpses had not been dead for more than a few days, and some of these corpses were already mummified. Their clothes disappeared from their bodies, exposing their darkened skin, and the colorful tattoos on their skin. These tattoos looked ferocious and mysterious. All sorts of tattoos, some were wild beasts, some were poisonous bugs, and there were even some strange flower and grass tattoos.

Staring at those men who were still struggling on the rope, the old men, all the villagers, they all started laughing. However, in their laugh you could not feel any malevolence, only a weird feeling of relaxation and satisfaction.

Wu Qi looked at this scene staggeringly, suddenly he heard Doggie shout out happily, “These barbarians were seeking death in our village once again, isn’t this just giving us credit out of nothing?”

Dozens of men on the bridgehead looked towards this direction, especially the old men who were carrying sticks. They all had their attention on Wu Qi.

Wu Qi bent his body and bowed with delicacy towards these few old men, he cupped his fist and bowed deeply.

“Little man Wu Qi, together with teacher and fellow disciples experienced a tragic incident. Luckily, you elders saved me! Little man is deeply grateful for this!”

Never allowing the old men the chance to speak, Wu Qi kneeled down on the ground and kowtowed three time respectively to the old men.

Grateful for saving his life, kowtowing three times was still too light. Wu Qi genuinely felt grateful to the villagers who had saved his life. They had saved his life, and because of that, he has a slight chance of avenging Wu Wang and Le Xiaobai. How could he not be grateful to them?

If it were not for the fact that he had lost everything, including his own clothes that were shattered in the Great Universal Dimensional Portal, Wu Qi would surely reward them handsomely.

Among these old men, the one with the oldest outlook, a mere bag of bones, face full of age-marks old man smiled. He shakily walks to Wu Qi, pulls him up from the ground.

“We’re all people of Dayan, what’s the point of so much bullshit? Hmm, little brother, you are a rogue barbarian hunter?”

Wu Qi followed along the story and continued. He stood up and nodded his head in respect, then he said, “Elder truly has perfect judgment, I am.”

The men behind the old man became agitated, they muttered in soft voices, as if they were cursing at those damn barbarians who had created another debt only payable with blood.

Having absorbed Le Xiaobai’s freakishly amazing comprehension and intelligence, Wu Qi quickly analyzed the situation and made some conclusions for himself. He continued the story while grinding his teeth, “Little man’s teacher and fellow disciples, all were killed by them! This regret shall last for eternity! After little man go back this time, little man will surely cultivate and practice with all effort! In coming days, little man will kill all enemies and avenge my teacher and fellow disciples!”

These men were referring to those barbarians from unknown origins, but in Wu Qi’s vow, he was referring to Miao Yuan’s clan and the Green Mountain Sect.

However, since both of their words matched perfectly, these few old men nodded their heads in approval. Praising him they said, “That’s what a good man should be! You are the rogue barbarian hunter who will travel around and hunt these barbarians! If you don’t avenge your own fellow disciples it would be a big disgrace!”

The old man who had just pulled Wu Qi up from the ground his Wu Qi’s chest forcefully. He shook his head and said, “But, little brother Wu Qi, your body is just too weak. With this, you won’t be a match for those

barbarians."

Clicking his tongue and letting out a sigh, the old man said with great hospitality, "In our Meng village, there are secret formulas passed down from our ancestor. Mixing beast tendons and beast bones with dozens of herbs is the best way to grow taller and get strong bones. Before you leave, old man will give you 100 packets of medicine, guaranteed you will double in size!"

Listening to what the old man said; Wu Qi felt both joy and annoyance.

His body shape was the perfect shape on Earth. Although he was a little bit slim, he was not weak. His muscles actually carried their own strength.

After inheriting the 'Scroll of Stealing', he knew that the strong of a person has nothing to do with the size of muscle. Nevertheless, this old man has enough kindness to help. Wu Qi could only bend his body deep down again and thank the elders of the village for their kindness.

Making a vow in his mind, Wu Qi promised that if he in the future reaches great heights, he would come back to this village and pay back all the kindness they have given him.

Just when he made this decision in his mind, within the forest on the other side of the river, a fist-sized ball of green flame suddenly shot out and hit right onto one of the ripped men who stood on the bridgehead.

A horrifying scream, the ripped man instantly covered in green flames. He was only able to roll a few times on the ground before he burned

completely into ashes.

A few of the elders were stunned. The villager who was standing guard on top of the archery tower shouted out loudly, “The barbarians are attacking us, there are many of them!”

The ear-splitting horn sounded out across the whole village. A large group of barbarians dressed in beast skin and covered in tattoos suddenly emerged from the forest on the other side of the river.

The leader of the barbarians had a thick black gas hovering around him and a fist sized dark green skull immersed within the black gas.

Pointing at the village ferociously, the leader of the barbarians roared wildly.

“Men, kill all! Women, rob all! Kids, eat all! My children, march!”

Chapter 8 – The Alliance

A bright spark blinked in front of his eyes. Wu Qi flipped his body backwards and performed 18 somersaults by instinct, instantly hiding himself behind the archery tower.

'Shoo', a deep yet subtle sound. A thumb sized sharp as a needle prickle about 1.5 meter long flew past Wu Qi's body closely, then penetrated into the ground 7-8 feet behind him. When the object flew past him, Wu Qi was able to smell a sweet yet stinking aroma. It was obvious that the prickle was poisonous.

Among the villagers, two ripped men were too late to evade; the prickle penetrated into their bodies. In just a few breaths of time, these two ripped men's bodies suddenly turned black, and then they died on the spot. Their bodies were violently cramping. The two more than 2 meters tall and ripped men soon shrank down to the size of an ordinary kid. Blood poured out from all seven apertures, and it quickly stained a large part of the dirt.

Wu Qi felt pins and needles all over his scalp after witnessing this. The poison on these prickles was too strong.

On the other side of the river, there were at least 700-800 barbarians approaching while screaming. They carried strong bows made from rattan, and kept shooting out prickle after prickle. Together with the sound of laughter, several prickles fell down from the sky like rain, leaving the villagers close to the suspension bridge in a sorry stage.

The 30 barbarians who were running the fastest, in just the time it took

to release two or three rounds of prickles, they had crossed the floating bridge and had come closed to the side of the suspension bridge.

The village elder who was talking to Wu Qi just now suddenly raised the stick in his hand high up into the air. All of his five fingers on his left hand curved a little, forming into a symbol. He suddenly took a deep breath. The short and skinny elder raised his chest up high, and then he roared with a deep voice as he tightened his fist. He did not loosen his fist until he stopped roaring.

A wild wind swept across out from nowhere, covering more than 50 meters' radius of area.

Another round of prickles fell down from the skies at the same time. The wild wind scooped up the prickles and shot them towards those barbarians who were starting to close in on the suspension bridge. Those 30 barbarians who were the quickest were so scared it felt like their hearts were going to jump out. They threw away the strong bows in their hands and jumped into the river for their lives. Prickles impaled deeply into the bodies of a few barbarians who were too slow, and in the blink of an eye their bodies turned black and died.

Wu Qi's eyes lit up as he stared at that elder. This skill was included in the 'Scroll of Stealing', it was amongst the most foundational and basic Five Elements skills, a Wood Element skill called 'Wind Summoning'. The elder's cultivation base was not strong, and the wind that he summoned could only cover around 50 meters' radius of area.

A strong 'Wind Summoning', once it is used, it can even change the climate in a radius of ten thousand miles. However, this was not something an elder from this remote village could accomplish.

The sharp noise of something piercing through the wind sounded out from above. The villagers on top of the few archery towers had started readying their crossbows. Dozens of arrows shot out together with a loud sound. The heads of those barbarians who had jumped into the river just now emerged from the water. The powerful arrows had penetrated deeply into their bodies, killing them all on the spot.

The barbarian leader surrounded by black gas on the other side of the river let out an angry roar. He raised both his hands up high and screamed in an odd fashion, and then he twisted his body and started moving in a weird rhythm. The dark green skull within the black gas opened its mouth and spat out another green fireball.

The elder shouted loudly, those villagers who were near the suspension bridge started evading on after another. The villagers who were standing guard on the archery tower were pulling the suspension bridge up with all their strength, trying to retract it. However, the fireball flew right onto the archery tower that was connected to the suspension bridge. With a loud bang, the green fireball exploded. The explosion destroyed most of the archery tower, and the villagers who were on top of the archery tower tore into pieces by the explosion. The suspension bridge forcefully fell back down.

The barbarians screamed out, they threw away their strong bows, and then they drew their huge blades and swords from their back. While shouting ‘awawawaw’, the pushed through the floating bridge.

The leader of the barbarians proudly let out a wild cry towards the skies, and then another large group of barbarians emerged from the forest behind him. The barbarians were totaling nearly a thousand, and

they were all carrying some sort of weapon in their hands. They screamed out with excitement as they started pushing through to the village entrance.

Rapid footsteps sounded out from behind, the young men in the village had heard the alarm from the horn. They grabbed their weapons and rushed to the village entrance. The Meng Village had a large population, there were nearly 1300-1400 young men gathering, and all of them were strong and capable.

Doggie grabbed two long swords and passed one to Wu Qi.

“Big brother Wu Qi, you be careful! Damn it, both the Qifu Barbarians and Huazu Barbarians… These two tribes have allied! Hey, if they didn’t, where would they find the guts to attack our Meng Village?”

Wu Qi took the long sword, and his arm instantly sunk down. He gazed at Doggie while gritting his teeth; Wu Qi was smiling bitterly in his mind.

This sword was almost 1.6 meters long, and it had the width of an adult’s palm. The thickest part of the sword was nearly 1 1/3 inches, and it weighed nearly 50 kg. It was a perfect weapon for those ripped men in the Meng Village, their strength and size was just perfect to cause the maximum damage with this sword. However, for Wu Qi, this sword was too heavy, too long, and too bulky. He could almost use this sword as a shield!

With a bitter smile, he stabbed the sword into the ground. Wu Qi looked around, and then he pulled a prickle that was used by the barbarians out from the ground.

The prickle had the diameter of a thumb; it was about 150 cm long, and it weighed not more than 1 kg. It was pretty solid. Wu Qi tried bending it with his finger, but it was almost as hard as raw steel. This thing, it was just perfect for Wu Qi, and it already came with poison. The damage it can cause is not any less than that of the huge sword.

Doggie gazed at Wu Qi with a surprised expression; he shook his head doubtfully.

"Sigh… Big brother Wu Qi, your strength is weak! In our Meng Village, you won't be able to find a woman!"

Doggie's words did not have any bad intentions; it was simply a sneer with good intentions. However, Wu Qi's face still blushed. He looked at the huge sword on the ground once again, and then he shook his head yet again. This weapon, he really does not have the ground to use it. Although he had inherited the 'Scroll of Stealing', he has not had the time to cultivate it systematically, and he does not have the ability to transform into a superman just by shaking his butt.

Taking a deep breath, Wu Qi held the prickled in his hand as he stood next to Doggie. In his hand, the prickle held steadily. In addition, a cold briefly swept across the surrounding area. Wu Qi slowly injected the prickle with his Innate Water Energy. A thin layer of water reflection emerged on the tip of the prickle.

Another round of rapid footsteps, thousands of women from the Meng Village were emerging from the village while holding strong bows in their hands. They held their position on the high ground behind the

archery tower, or on the rooftops, or on the top of some rocks, or on the top of some trees. They pulled their bows and started shooting arrows.

Screams were heard everywhere. Those barbarians who were like raging beasts immediately suffered over 50 casualties. The arrows with diameters of an adult thumb had penetrated deeply into their bodies and come out on the other side of their bodies. However, there was no blood.

Those barbarians who were struck by the arrows screamed and cried. After some violent cramping and trembling, their bodies turned hard, and then they died. Just like those barbarians, the arrows made by the Meng Villagers were fed with poison as well. Those hit by arrows, even if they did not hit anything vital, they would certainly die.

The barbarian leader who was standing on the other side of the river let out an angry howl. He grinded his teeth and started twisting his waist, then two streams of blood suddenly shot out from his nose. The black gas hovering around him started rolling, and the dark green skull within the black gas started making some ghost-like growling sound. Suddenly it opened its mouth, then it spat out three fist sized green fireballs.

A few of the village elders alerted everyone with their shouts. Those villagers who stood close to the suspension bridge hurriedly backed off.

Three green fireballs flew across the river surfaced and slammed onto the area closest to the suspension bridge's bridgehead. Three loud explosions sounded out, the ground underneath the bridgehead exploded and became three wide craters filled with large amounts of green flame. No one could get close to these craters because of the flame.

The retreating villagers had distracted the women, causing the speed of arrows being shot to slow down.

During this small window of distraction, dozens of barbarians who had the biggest bodies as well as the most ferocious tattoos on their skins managed to push through onto the suspension bridge. They drew the hand axes hanging on their waists, and with a shout, they threw the axes towards the villagers.

An elder shouted, “Shield!”

Dozens of huge shields made from a few layers of beast skins were set up, firmly guarding all the villagers.

Each of these barbarians were carrying 12 hand axes. A few hundred hand axes approached together with the sound of the wind shattering. The axes forcefully slammed onto the huge shields.

Tens of villagers who were holding the huge shields were forced back by the huge force coming from the hand axe. A few of them spat out blood due to the huge impact, but their bodies still stood straight, and they still held onto the shields firmly. Wu Qi saw the veins in their arms expanding, the skin on their hands and muscles breaking off, and blood flowing down from the surface of the shields.

Doggie hit Wu Qi forcefully with his elbow, he roared with a deep voice, “Big brother Wu Qi, don’t lose your focus! These barbarians dared attack our village, perhaps there is some evil plot going on. If we’re not careful, we will die!”

Before he finished his words, dozens of hand axes managed to slip through the gaps between the huge shield and fall into the groups of villagers.

Screams and cries sounded out, tens of ripped men from the Meng Village were sent flying into the air by the hand axes while spitting out mouthfuls of blood. One of the hand axes hit a man right on his chest, resulting in becoming emaciated. A few rib bones even came out from his back.

Doggie shouted loudly, “Shit! Uncle Meng Tu is gone!”

Looking at the hand axes’ effectiveness in killing the villagers, the barbarians started cheering.

An elder suddenly shouted, and the arrows shot out suddenly became dense again. Thousands of strong women villagers shot their arrows at the same time, the rain of arrows had sealed of the suspension bridge’s bridgehead. Those barbarians who had thrown their hand axes were now screaming in a horrified manner. At least half of them had become like gratings with bodies full of holes.

The suspension bridge was only 5 meters long, and the back of the bridge was packed with barbarians. Those barbarians standing at the front knew that there was no way for them to evade this arrow shower, so they could only do what the first batch of barbarians did, jump off the bridge.

Terrifying screams kept sounding out. A few fishes that looked like

crocodiles, but had a sharp horn sticking out from their heads suddenly emerged from the bottom of the river. These river fishes possessed razor sharp teeth. They opened their mouths and crazily leapt at those barbarians. Arms, legs, it was all torn off by these fishes. The river soon became red.

The river started boiling; countless fierce river fishes started approaching with great speed. They opened their big mouths and started biting those barbarians who had fallen into the river.

Arrows kept raining down, the barbarians on the suspension bridge were unable to push through, and they were unable to fall back as well. They were now in an extremely awkward position.

The elder who had unleashed the 'Wind Summoning' skill breathed out a sigh of relief. With a laugh, he said, "These barbarians has come to seek death once again. Every year they always come and disturb our Meng Village three to five times, and they get defeated every time. This is just giving our Meng Village merit out of nothing!"

All the villagers were laughing as they watched the wonderful scene of the arrow shower killing those barbarians.

Just when the villagers had all their attention on the barbarians on the suspension bridge, the sky suddenly turned dark.

Wu Qi suddenly raised his head up, and then he saw more than a hundred eagles with wings spanning close to 20 meters rapidly descending from the sky.

Followed by ear piercing howling, a few hundred short-bodied barbarians wearing clothes made from feathers and identical tattoos on their exposed skin jumped off the back of these eagles, they all carried long pikes in their hands.

These barbarians landed right in the middle of the villages, and then they started cruelly thrusting the pike in their hands at these villagers.

In the blink of an eye, a few hundred villagers had been struck by these pikes; they bled and fell down.

The eagles flying in the air flew directly to the women who were standing on high ground shooting arrows. The huge claws rapidly descended from above, then they grabbed a few women, and then those eagles flew back into skies and started flying in circles.

The villagers formation was immediately broken, and the arrows stopped being shot.

The long sword in Doggie's hand fell onto the ground. With a roar he said, "Fuck! Since when did the Bird Barbarian tribe ally with them?"

In the blink of an eye, a long pike, like a poisonous snake, stabbed towards Doggie's chest while making a 'shhshh' sound.

When Doggie saw this long pike, it was already too late for him to evade it.

Chapter 9 – Barbarian Hunter

Looking at the pike that was heading towards his heart, Doggie felt a shiver rushing from the bottom of his feet to the top of his head; his whole body had become stiff.

Some villagers turned their heads towards Doggie, two ripped villagers started running over. However, those Bird Barbarians were in the middle of attacking the villagers, how could they make the distance in this short amount of time? Even if no one blocked their way, the gap between them was simply too big, they would not have enough time to rescue Doggie.

Wu Qi suddenly moved. Just three inches before the pike reached Doggie's chest, Wu Qi's body suddenly leapt. Like a bullet that just left its chamber, he ramped onto that barbarian. The prickle in his hand impaled deeply into the barbarian's heart.

Casually hitting the pike with his left hand, the innate water energy turned into a circular force, shattering the long pike.

That mysterious man who had passed the 'Scroll of Stealing' to Wu Qi made the Sect Elder token from Innate Water Soul Stone. It contained a thread of innate water energy, therefore, when Wu Qi started cultivating the 'Seven Foundation Establishment' in the 'Scroll of Stealing', the first chapter was the 'Source of Water'.

Innate water is the softest element, but it could also be extremely hard and powerful. The soft part, nothing in the world could break it; the hard and powerful part, it could break anything in the world.

Just like the ocean, does not matter if it is a strike of lightning or a huge mountain, nothing can hurt it. However, once the ocean roars with a tsunami, the raging water can destroy cities and countries and push down mountains as if they were pieces of cake.

Wu Qi's palm just now, the innate water energy had turned into a circulating force, even raw steel would be shattered by the palm; let alone these barbarians pikes made from canes. Although these canes were pretty strong, they would not be able to resist Wu Qi's attack.

The poisoned prickle penetrated deeply into the body. The bird barbarian's body trembled, blood shot out from all seven apertures, then his body suddenly shrunk into a small piece of meat.

Pulling out the prickle, Wu Qi shouted at the stunned Doggie, "If you don't want to die, then grab your sword, let's fight them!"

Doggie was startled for a moment, and then he suddenly grabbed his long sword. With a howl, he swung his sword. The sword almost hit Wu Qi's head, but luckily, he lowered his neck in time. The sword was just inches away from his head. The gigantic sword carried a huge raging wind; it had left a bloodline on Wu Qi's head.

"Damn Doggie!"

Wu Qi was so mad he cursed. Suddenly, a loud bang sounded out. A bird barbarian who had just raised his long pike in order to attack Wu Qi had been slapped away by Doggie's huge sword. These bird barbarians were short, and they did not have great strength, just great dexterity.

When faced with Doggie's terrifying strength, the barbarian could only scream in terror. The long pike was broken off from the middle, and the barbarian was sent flying dozens of meters.

"Kill barbarian! Kill barbarian! Kill barbarian!"

When Wu Qi and Doggie had solved their own problems, a few of the Meng Village elders gathered, they roared and shouted aloud.

At this moment, the replies were as loud as thunder. The thousands of villager adult men and women shouted 'Kill barbarians' in unison.

A few hundred villagers stayed behind to kill those bird barbarians while the rest pushed through to the suspension bridge's bridgehead. A few hundred barbarians had already crossed the bridge, and while howling the started approaching the village. If these barbarians were not blocked near the bridgehead, once they push through into the village, even if they kill all the barbarians in the end, the Meng Village would be destroyed.

Two elders stood at the front while leading the villagers towards the bridgehead. Although these two elders were so old that they could not stand straight, they strength was not any lower than those young villagers were. When they attacked, it showed that they were much more experienced and vicious; every single attack was aimed at the barbarians' weaknesses.

The two elders rushed towards the bridgehead while carrying two walking sticks. Every time they moved, tens of barbarians would be beaten by the sticks until all their bones and veins were broken, they died

in horrifying ways. The two elders were like two raging tigers leading a group of tiger cubs, they crazily killed everyone who blocked their way.

The barbarians did not want to be outdone, they also shouted loudly. Their eyes turned red as they engaged themselves with the villagers in an intense fight.

The men from the Meng Village wanted to chase those barbarians back onto the suspension bridge, but those barbarians were guarding the bridgehead with all their might, they would never allow the villagers to get close, they wanted more of their people to push into the village to kill and rob. Both groups ended up fighting on the bridgehead, and soon, dozens of people on both sides were killed. Fresh blood, human meat, it was all over the place.

Suddenly, the barbarian leader who was on the other side of the river had a strange laugh. He pulled out a blade made from bone, and then he suddenly chopped his thumb off and fed it into the mouth of the dark green skull. The small skull chewed on the thumb, and then its size suddenly doubled.

With a howl, the skull, that had doubled in size, opened up its mouth and spat out tens of dark green fireballs at once.

The flames were burning hot. The fireballs flew past the river surface and fell onto different Meng Villagers groups.

Both elders shouted ‘oh shit’. All the fireballs then exploded at the same time, more than hundred adults from the Meng Village were instantly covered by fire, and then they burned into ashes in just a few breaths

time. The Meng Villagers' formation was in turmoil, more barbarians were able to cross the bridge. Shouting and cheering happily, they raised their huge blades and swords, and they started attacking the villagers as if they were chopping vegetables.

Ear piercing screams sounded out in the skies, those women villagers caught by the eagles were suddenly thrown down from the skies one thousand meters above the ground. In the time of two or three breaths, over three hundred women villagers smashed onto the ground and turned into a mess. Some of the women who were thrown from the sky even landed in the crowd of villagers, killing some of those who could not avoid in time.

Witnessing all of this with anger, Wu Qi quietly left Doggie behind. He grabbed the prickle and started running towards those bird barbarians.

He repeatedly stabbed the prickle in his hands with great speed!

One after another, the bird barbarians had their throats impaled by Wu Qi's prickle, some of them had their hearts pierced. They all fell onto the ground and died.

A few of the leaders amongst the bird barbarians had found out how the movement behind Wu Qi's attack worked, so they decided to try their best to block his prickle with their long pike. However, when the prickle that had been injected with innate water energy touched the long pikes, the long pikes immediately became like small boats trapped within a whirlpool, they could not be controlled and was deviated to the side. There was almost no resistance when the prickle struck; it easily pierced the bodies of these bird barbarians.

Slightly tilting his body frontwards, both his arms filled up with boiling inner energy. When Wu Qi swung his arms, if you listen closely then you would be able to hear the subtle sound of water rolling. He was like water that had just broken through from the dam, raging and passing over the bird barbarians' troops. In the time it takes to take three to five breaths, Wu Qi had killed 37 bird barbarians with his terrifying speed.

All the surrounding Meng Villagers were cheering, dozens of adults from the Meng Village started closely following him, working together with him to kill those bird barbarians. Swinging and cutting with those huge blades and sword, the bird barbarians who were stunned by Wu Qi's crazy attacks were howling in pain. Soon, a few hundred bird barbarians had died and fallen onto the ground.

The rest of the bird barbarians were screaming in fear. They kept making sharp eagle-cries, signaling their eagles to come save them. Those few hundred eagles flying in the air rapidly descended from the skies, trying to fetch these bird barbarians and retreat.

The barbarian leader on the other side of the river was roaring in range, swearing and scolding angrily at these undependable bird barbarians.

However, in the blink of an eye, this barbarian leader started laughing loudly again. Because of his fireball attack just now, more than seven hundred barbarians had managed to cross the suspension bridge and enter the Meng Village. The villagers were slowly losing their ground, and their line of defense was soon going to be breached.

Breathing out heavily, blood started flowing out from the barbarian

leader's seven apertures, and the blood start pouring out from his thumb even faster. To stimulate the dark green skull, the barbarian leader had paid a big price. After looking at his own people starting to get an advantage, he shouted out his orders, then he finally sat down on the floor due to lack of energy.

While panting rapidly, the barbarian leader roared, "Give me the 10 juiciest women! Those who dare steal from me, I will castrate!"

Tens of guards around the barbarian leader gazed at their own leader, none of them could stand still any longer; they all started slowly walking towards the suspension bridge. The barbarian leader rolled his eyes and hastily gave out a command, "Go to the village and watch those bastards! Ten juiciest women; mine! Softest clothes; mine! Best porcelains; mine! Ten most tender kids; mine! Go! Do not let them steal what's mine during the chaos!"

The guards started cheering, they could not wait any longer; they hurriedly crossed the bridge.

The barbarian leader started drooling, he stared blankly in the direction of the Meng Village; he had a foolish smile on his face, "Juicy women!"

From the forest behind him, a fast arrow made from steel penetrated the barbarian leader's head; it pierced right through his skull. A symbol on the arrow's head started blinking, and then it exploded and shattered the barbarian leader's body with a bang.

The barbarian leader was dead, the hovering black gas and the dark green skull let out a sharp scream, and then it flew up into the sky.

A six-inch long talisman shot out from the forest and stuck itself onto the dark green skull. After a faded white amber blink, the dark green skull fell down from the sky with a painful cry. It slammed into the ground and was unable to move.

A team of nearly one hundred strong men ran out from the forest with great speed. The leader was a strong man who wore leather armor and carried a Nine Ring Broadsword in his hands. This man was almost 2.5 meters tall, and his waist was at least 190 cm. His skin was dark and his muscles looked like they were about to explode. He swung the huge broadsword in his hands and roared with his head raised up high, “Brothers, kill the barbarians, kill the barbarians! The city has increased the rewards per barbarian head! One head, 100 coins!”

Nearly one hundred strong men shouted in unison, “Kill the barbarians! Kill the barbarians!”

Accompanied by the loud shouting, these men rushed to the other end of the floating bridge. Standing in a three vertical line formation, they drew the strong crossbows hanging on their backs and sealed off the floating bridge.

Over a thousand barbarians had entered Meng Village, and the rest of them were still trying to cross the crowded floating bridge. Some barbarians would occasionally fall into the river as the result of all the pushing by the other barbarians; they became food for the river fishes. These barbarians could not wait to rush into the village to rob and kill. Where could one find the time to care about their own kind and the friendship between themselves? They just kept pushing and slamming each other, crowding the entire floating bridge. It was so crowded that

even water was unable to pass between them.

The water could not pass, but the arrows could.

The power of the strong crossbows used by this team of men who had come out form the forest was horrifying. When the strings were released and an explosion like sound was heard, dozens of arrow was shot out with great speed. Each arrow immediately pierced through the body of their target, and then it continued to pierce through at least three to five more barbarians before finally losing its momentum.

These men used a method called the ‘three phase shooting’. One group shoot, one group prepares, and another group reloads the arrows. The arrows seemed endless; they kept being shot out one after the other. Soon, all the barbarians on the floating bridge were dead.

The river fishes were about to start biting the barbarian corpses that had fallen down from the bridge, but the leader hurriedly took out a packet of powder and poured it into the river. A pungent smell spread across, and these river fishes turned around swam away with great speed. None of them dared to stay close to this powder.

The man was laughing aloud, “A barbarian head is worth 100 coins, how could I let you eat them? Brothers, kill those barbarians with all your effort! When we go back to the town, we will go find some girls and have some fun! Haha, this time we’re going to be rich!”

The strong men were all laughing and cheering. Although they were laughing and cheering without stop, their movements were still stable. Each of them pulled their strings and shot out arrows while marching on

the floating bridge that was filled with blood. They were cruelly harvesting the lives of these barbarians.

These poor barbarians were all squeezed together; they did not even have the room to evade. Underneath the continuous arrows, in just a short time, arrows had killed all these few hundred barbarians.

The village elders were all cheering, “The barbarian hunters are here! Boys, kill those barbarians!”

The villagers of Meng Village were cheering; the barbarians were panicking.

Chapter 10 – Stealing Blood

When people started shouting ‘kill the barbarians’, Wu Qi entered a thrilled state.

Just now when he killed those bird barbarians, the prickle in Wu Qi’s right hand impaled deeply into their bodies, and his left hand pushed onto their bodies habitually.

This was a secret inherited skill of the Underhand Sect, as well as one of the most basic skills in the ‘Scroll of Stealing’. The Web Hand and the Picking Stars Palm used together, with the addition of circulating energy formed by the innate water energy in his arms, when he pressed his palm onto these barbarians, an invisible thread of qi and some blood would shoot out from their bodies. Wu Qi’s palm would feel warm, and then the thread of qi and the blood that would strengthen his energy would suddenly flow into his body.

Hurt by the disciples of Shangguan Ye and seriously wounded by the massive pressure of the portal, Wu Qi’s body was like a dry weed that suddenly showered in rain. He greedily absorbed these warm threads of qi and blood.

‘Scroll of Stealing’, ‘Scroll of Stealing’! Taking others excess and supplying our own insufficiency, taking without informing, this is stealing!”

Using the Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries as the foundation one could cultivate yin, yang, metal, wood, water, fire and earth. With these seven laws together, one would be able to embrace the entire universe and

steal anything one desires. The Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries; besides the normal arteries in the arms, the Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries corresponds to yin, yang, metal, wood, water, fire and earth, the seven elements, the seven laws.

Wu Qi possesses the Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries, and this was the reason why he was able to inherit the Scroll of Stealing.

Right now, with the support of a thread of innate water energy that was contained within the Sect Elder Token, he was cultivating the 'Chapter – Source of Water'. Once he succeeds in forming the innate water energy, he would able to steal the energy of anything in this world that had water as its source. Humans contained a lot of water, and the main component of human blood was water. Most of a human's spirit is actually stored within the blood.

Therefore, when he placed his hand on the bird barbarian's body with the Web Hand, the circulating force in his palm begun absorbing and purifying parts of the barbarian's qi and blood essence. Using the Picking Stars Palm to pick and pull, that portion of qi and blood essence would flow into his body.

This portion of qi and blood essence originated from the barbarian's blood, and its roots was water, therefore it was easily digested by the innate water energy and entered Wu Qi's body to become part of his spirit without any obstacles.

Because Wu Qi's cultivation level was not high, the portions of blood and qi essence he could steal was only equal to a fraction of a normal man's blood and qi. However, after killing dozens of barbarians, the amount of blood essence and qi he had stolen was almost equal to 10

percent of a bird barbarian's blood essence and qi. This area was rich in natural energies, a normal barbarian's blood and qi was at least 10 times stronger than a normal human from Earth was. The total amount of qi and blood Wu Qi had stolen was almost equal to the total amount of all his blood and qi.

In just the short time of a few breaths, Wu Qi's qi and blood had doubled!

Feeling warm in every part of his body, a huge amount of spirit was continuously circulating in his body; all the remaining internal injuries in Wu Qi's body were healed now. The stolen blood and qi essence slowly deposited into Wu Qi's veins and bones, slowly turning into Wu Qi's own possession.

In this short amount of time, Wu Qi's qi and blood foundation had almost doubled. The ability to carry energy, nutrients, and the ability for the blood cells to regenerate, had almost doubled. Wu Qi's pale skin even carried a faint blood color. The blood in his body was circulating with great speed, as if there was a strong force in his body that eagerly wanted to come out, only wishing to have a bloody fight.

Taking a deep breath, a trick to cultivate the 'Scroll of Stealing' suddenly appeared in Wu Qi's mind. With his body's current foundation, although he possessed the Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries, aside from his arms, the rest of his body was not suited to cultivate as he was now. Increasing the qi and blood foundation repeatedly, he had now hit his limits. He has to wait for his body to completely digest and deposit all the blood and qi he had obtained, only then could he use the Scroll of Stealing again.

Taking the world's excess to supply our own insufficiency. If one were to

supply their own insufficiency with too much, then he would die from having too much. This was the tragedy called greed.

Clinging his left palm into a fist, scared that he would use the Web Hand and Picking Stars Palm, Wu Qi placed his left hand behind his back and tightened his right hand's grip on the prickle. Roaring with a face as red as blood, he pushed himself into the bird barbarians who were in turmoil.

The prickle swept past like a strike of lightning, the blazing sound of air sounded out. One bird barbarian after another fell down onto the ground, bleeding from all seven apertures, and bodies shrunken down into the size of a baby. Dark bloodstains smeared the ground, filling the air with a pungent smell of rotten meat.

Directing the innate water energy into his eyes, Wu Qi's eyes were covered in a thin layer of water reflection.

Everywhere his vision passed, the blood circulation within the bird barbarian's bodies could be seen clearly. The surface of all bird barbarians was covered with a thin blood spectrum layer. The place where the blood spectrum would glow the brightest was the strong part of the bird barbarian's body, and the place with the weakest blood spectrum would of course be the weakest spot on their body.

The prickle only needed too slightly poke the part with the weakest blood spectrum, as it was the weakest spot of these bird barbarians.

Soon, another couple dozen bird barbarians died under Wu Qi's prickle. The huge eagles leapt down from the skies while emitting ear-piercing

cries. Three huge eagles flew towards Wu Qi's direction, six eagle claws swung downwards, trying to grab Wu Qi's head at the same time.

With a loud laugh, Wu Qi pushed his left hand out, unleashing a soft and tender circulating force. Six eagle claws twisted within the circulating force; clinging onto each other for no reason. The three huge eagle let out desperate cries, their claws were clinging onto each other in a messy manner, resulting in all of them losing their balance and falling onto the ground in a sorry state.

The prickle swung across, and without any hesitation, Wu QI pierced through the necks of these three huge eagle with his prickle.

The Meng Villagers were cheering; Doggie who was following Wu Qi closely was happily swinging the huge sword in his hand, cutting the heads of these three huge eagles down. The rest of the villagers came rushing in and attacked the rest of the bird barbarians, causing them to start fleeing. The bird barbarians had completely lost all chance of fighting back.

The bird barbarians had lost their will to fight; they kept letting out sharp cries, hoping the huge eagles in the skies would come down and rescue them.

Everyone suddenly started shouting kill the barbarians! The barbarian hunter troop had lined up in a formation and started using the powerful bows and arrow to seal off the barbarian's retreat path. The Meng Villagers and the barbarian hunters attacked the barbarians from all directions, causing the barbarians to lose all order.

The Meng Village landscape did not favor the barbarians. There was a huge river at the front, and a gigantic mountain at the back that could not be passed. Villagers and barbarian hunters guarded the only places they could go, so unless the barbarians kills all the villagers and barbarian hunters, there is no way for them to escape.

Let alone the Meng Villagers, aside from the two elders who are much stronger than the rest, the villagers' abilities are almost at the same level as these barbarians. However, those barbarian hunters, they are professional rangers, as well as half-military troops. Their abilities are much stronger than these ordinary people are.

Standing on the suspension bridge's bridgehead, aside from a team of twenty barbarian hunters who still held onto their crossbows and guarded the suspension bridge, the rest of the barbarian hunters had put down their crossbows. Drawing their huge weapons, they joined the battle and supported the Meng Villagers in rounding up the panicking barbarians.

The man almost three meters tall carrying the Nine Rings Broadsword was the first to draw his weapon. He swung his sword like it was a wave of water, and he would occasionally shout out as well. Covering his broadsword there was a thick aura, and each time he swung his sword, the barbarian's weapon and body would break. None of the barbarians here could resist even a single blow from him.

The other barbarian hunters were all brave and courageous. It did not matter if it was the weapons in their hands or the leather armor they were wearing, it was all better quality than the ones used by the Meng Villagers and barbarians. Their ability to defend themselves and attack was also much stronger than the villagers and barbarians. These men all possessed strong cultivation bases and they were all a few times stronger

than the strongest men in the Meng Village were. These barbarians could not resist a single blow when facing them.

With just a team of a few hundred barbarian hunters, they had completely turned the situation around. The Meng Villagers were all cheering, together with the barbarian hunters they had managed to corner the barbarians and kill them without much effort. Soon, more than half of the barbarians had died on the spot.

The huge eagles in the skies were letting out sad cries. The stubbornly leapt down towards the ground trying to save the bird barbarians, but the barbarian hunters' crossbows were too threatening for them. Dozens of huge eagles were hit by these arrows and were slammed onto the ground forcefully. How could the other eagles in the skies dare get close to the ground after seeing this?

This sight excited Wu Qi, he held the prickle in his hand tightly as he wanted to join the battle once again and help kill all barbarians. Suddenly, the blood and qi in his body expanded, his face became so red that it seemed like blood was about to pour out. Wu Qi was shocked by this, he hastily threw away the prickle in his hand, and then he sat down with crossed legs and start cultivating to calm his breathing.

He had stolen qi and blood essence equal to the total amount of blood essence and qi in his body. If he just went to sleep for two or three days, then the blood essence and qi would completely settle down. However, he had absorbed this qi and blood essence while in battle. While absorbing, he had also fought with all his strength. A human's qi and blood would expand and start boiling when circulated, and right now, the blood in his body was running circulating with great speed while boiling, his blood veins were about to explode.

Circulating according to the Scroll of Stealing's instructions quietly, Wu Qi started circulating all the blood and qi in his body, slowly merging it into his own bone marrow and tendons. It took him almost 15 minutes before he was finally able to completely convert the stolen qi and blood essence into his own.

If one were to crack open Wu Qi's bone and inspect his bone marrow, one would be able to discover that his bone marrow had become stronger and denser, very different from ordinary people. In addition, the liveliness of the bone marrow was incredibly strong, and the color of the newly produced blood was extremely red, it contained strong life force.

The blood red color on his face slowly faded away. Wu Qi took a deep breath, followed by a deep yet subtle breath sounding like a bull's breath. Two white steam clouds slowly flowed out from his nose.

The blood was flowing around in his body happily; it was as if a very powerful force was stored within his body. It was also much easier for him to move now than before.

After receiving enough blood essence and qi nourishment, Wu Qi's vision became clearer, and he could hear much better than before. Even his mind had become sharper than before.

Blood and qi was a man's roots, when the qi and blood becomes stronger, a man's spirit would also become stronger. The benefits that Wu Qi had obtained from these bird barbarians today, if it was any orthodox practitioner or cultivator, it would require more than ten years of hard cultivation in order for them to increase their own blood and qi to this

level.

"The dao of this world, when others have too much while I'm lacking, I'll take their excess and supply my own insufficiency!"

Wu Qi suddenly had more understanding towards the Scroll of Stealing.

Too bad, the Sect Elder Token was made from a piece of Innate Soul Stone. Wu Qi could only wish that he had enough luck to find Innate Soul Stones with metal, wood, dire or earth properties. If he does, then he would be able to successfully cultivate the other four source chapter. As for an Innate Yin Soul Stone or Innate Yang Soul Stone, Wu Qi did not have too much hope of being able to obtain one. He could only dream about these rare treasures.

The Scroll of Stealing provided with many benefits, but the requirements to cultivate it also gave him a big headache.

While Wu Qi was in a daze, two barbarians' heads shot up into the sky. The leader of the barbarian hunters carrying the 3 meter long Nine Ring Broadsword appeared in front of him.

Wi Qi focused his vision, and then he hurriedly stood up. He cupped his fist and bowed politely towards that man.

"Brothers, little man Wu Qi pays his respect to you!"

Breathing out a few breaths of relief, the muscular man gazed at Wu Qi, and then he suddenly smiled.

“We’re all brothers of this world! You’re too kind!”

Chapter 11 – The Night Ride

As night came, cries of grief rang out from within Meng village.

During the battle, all of over two thousand barbarians were killed, at least half of the warriors from all three barbarian tribes were lost. But the Meng village suffered heavy losses too. Although they got the help from the barbarian hunters, who were actually there to resupply themselves, more than seven hundred villagers were killed.

At least one person in every family got killed by the barbarians. Every family is in mourning and crying in grief of their losses.

Wu Qi was sitting with his leg crossed on a tree branch of a big tree that stretched out over the river, he placed his arms on his chest, looking at the suspension bridge not far away. A few barbarian hunters with big axes are cutting down trees to help the village fix their archery tower and to fix the suspension bridge that was destroyed during the battle. Though the battle had happened only a few hours earlier, the archery tower, which had been destroyed, was almost completely fixed.

Meng village is the only supply point for those who enter and exit the woods in the few thousand miles around Little Meng Mountain. No matter whether they are venturing into the Little Meng Mountain to harvest herbs, to hunting, or, like this group of professional barbarian hunters, hunting barbarians, before they enter and after they exit the mountain, all of them will stop by the Meng village and rest and resupply all their necessities.

Therefore, the relationship between the Meng village and those herb

gatherers, hunters, and barbarian hunters is very good, while the relationship with the barbarians is really bad.

Normally, Meng village would be disturbed by those barbarians a few times a year, but never had they been attacked like they were today, three barbarian tribes working together to attack Meng Village. The most surprising were those bird barbarians, as their tribe is at least seven to eight hundred miles away from Meng village. No one knows why they were so crazy as to come all this way to wreak havoc in Meng Village.

Anyway, this time, Meng village had suffered a great loss. Even Doggie's father, the muscular man who brought Wu Qi back to Meng village, had died under the strange fireball shot out by that barbarian leader.

Sighing, Wu Qi looked up into the starry sky, murmuring to himself, "To live on is not an easy task, but I will still persevere to live on with this life of mine!"

A weird 'hehe' laugh came from afar. The leader of the barbarian hunters, Zhang Hu, who was carrying the three foot long 'Nine Rings Broadsword', was walking towards Wu Qi with a wine sack almost as big as two bulls' heads. He thrust the huge wine sack at Wu Qi and, with a bright smile on his face, said, "What brother Wu Qi said is true. To live in this world is really difficult! But we, as men, still need to live on. Right?"

Grabbing the wine sack, Wu Qin drinks two mouthfuls of hard liquor and frowned.

There was a spicy, pungent smell mixed in with the smell of high concentration alcohol, but the taste was really awful. The wine was mixed

with some unknown herbs. It was very useful to improve one's blood circulation, expel coldness, and to help get rid of minor toxins in one's body, but the taste of the wine was worse than some poisons.

After forcing himself to swallow two mouthfuls of wine, Wu Qi simply threw the wine sack back to Zhang Wu, who was standing under the tree. With a bitter smile on his face, Wu Qi asked, "Big brother Zhang Hu, where did you all come from?"

Grabbing the wine sack and downing a few gulps of wine, Zhang Hu burped out satisfyingly, and spoke casually, "We just came out from the mountain and were about to go back to Little Meng City and have some fun. My group has been working on the mountain for more than half a year. We had a pretty nice harvest this time around."

With a sigh, Zhang Hu looked back toward Meng village. He smiled bitterly and said, "It was unfortunate that this happened to Meng village."

Wu Qi doesn't say anything. He just holds his arms and listens to what Zhang Hu is saying.

"But, on the bright side, Doggie and those other young guys are going to become adults soon. Meng village will survive. Sigh, few years back I wrote a letter to the governor, asking him to send an army to stand guard in Meng village, but that governor will never agree!"

Wu Qi lowered his head, quickly analyzing all the information contained within Zhang Hu's words.

Suddenly, they heard the pattering of feet nearby. Wu Qi, sitting up high, saw a girl from the village holding the hand of a barbarian hunter and leaving the village in a sneaky way, walking into a tall grass field near the village. Not long after that, the tall grass starting to swing back and forth.

Zhang Hu lowered his voice and laughed under his breath.

“Brother Wu Qi, let’s keep our voices down, so as not to disturb them.”

Wu Qi looked at that grass field and nodded his head, as if he had thought of something. He had seen that girl earlier in the day. Her husband had been killed during the fight and she was left alone with a daughter at home. Now she sneaks out in the middle of night and mates with a barbarian hunter. Perhaps she is trying to ‘borrow a seed’.

These barbarian hunters are all strong men. Their talents and skills are much greater than those that of the men in the village. If she can give birth to a boy, then, by ‘borrowing a seed’ from them, the boy will be able to support the family when he grows up, and continue the heritage of this family. The villagers respect those who are strong. ‘Borrowing a seed’ from a barbarian hunter is better than finding her target in the village.

Nodding his head, Wu Qi silently came down from the tree, walked closer to Zhang Wu, sat down on the ground, and leaned back against the tree.

“Big brother Zhang Hu, I have spent the last ten years following and learning from my teacher. This is the first time I have left him and ventured out alone, but then ran into this. I was wondering about the

world outside of this mountain. What is it like out there?

After making up a fake identity, Wu Qi starting to ask about the world outside of the mountain. He is not planning on staying in Meng village. This piece of land is just too small and won't provide any advantage for Wu Qi.

The skills within the Scroll of Stealing all required him to obtain the excess of this universe to supply his own insufficiency. How much of an advantage can the tiny Meng village give Wu Qi? Even if he strips away everything they have, it just won't give him any advantages. Only by leaving this mountain and going to the outside world, will he have more opportunities. That is where he will have the best chances to become stronger.

But, what does the outside world actually look like? The villagers of Meng village rarely leave the mountain. They did, occasionally, go out, but it was, at most, just to pay a visit to Little Meng City. Then they would just come back. They simply don't have the information that Wu Qi needs urgently.

After tilting back up his head and drinking two more mouthfuls of hard liquor, Zhang Hu smacked his lips.

"What can become of it? The Great Yan Dynasty, who is the overlord of all lords, is still not bothering with what is happening down there. All those kingdoms are fighting amongst each other restlessly. The wealthy and influential clans within these kingdoms are conning and cheating each other to the point where they are all exhausted. And the young masters of these clans are harming and hurting each other in a messy chaotic situation!"

Curling his lips in disdain, Zhang Hu gave a cold snort, “However, the Little Meng City is located in a remote place, so it is still fairly easy to earn a stable meal there!”

Clasping forcefully on Wu Qi’s shoulder, Zhang Hu sighed, “Brother Wu Qi, listen to big brother’s advice. The area outside the mountain is totally different from the area of the mountain.”

Wu Qi staring at Zhang Hu and smiles, “Fine, I’ll listen to big brother Zhang Hu. If I can’t deal with it anymore, I’ll come back here and spend the rest of my life hunting barbarians with big brother!”

Making some ‘click click’ sound with his tongue, Zhang Hu decided that Wu Qi was just another rookie who just came out from the mountain, trying to spread his wings and fly up high, but never really gave a thought on his own abilities. Does he really think he has enough to fly up in the world outside of this mountain.

Zhang Hu had seen a lot of these rookies before.

Shaking his head, Zhang Hu hesitated and asked, “Then I’ll wish you a smooth journey. But, brother Wu Qi, I saw you kill quite a lot of bird barbarians today. You are quite a skillful man, eh? You and your teacher, and your fellow disciples… what happened to them?”

Wu Qi smashed the ground forcefully with both of his hands. After some time, in a serious voice, he said, “I never had the chance to clearly see what happened. We were walking for a time, then there was a strike of thunder, and then I fainted.”

Zhang Hu, as if he had related it to something, suddenly gasped.

After remaining silent for a moment, Zhang Hu spoke with a bitter smile, “That really is a calamity. Brother, I can only say that you are just unlucky to have met some unreasonable cultivators. I guess you must have disturbed them and, thus, they struck out in anger.”

Wu Qi, nodding his head, didn’t say a word. He grabbed Zhang Hu’s wine sack, and, in one breath, drank half of the hard liquor in the sack.

Opening his mouth, Zhang Hu wanted to say a few more words to console Wu Qi, but he only shook his head and breathed out a long sigh.

The two men took turns drinking the hard liquor and, soon, the wine sack was empty. Wu Qi had the protection of innate water energy, so when the hard liquor entered into his stomach it was immediately broken down into threads of hot air and then safely moved around his body. He never even felt the slightest bit tipsy. But the liquor had hit Zhang Hu’s hard. He laid on the floor with his hands and feet spread and laughed dryly with a ‘shh shh’ sound.

“Three years ago, I, Zhang Hu, was a General, and at the peak of the Houtian level. I, unintentionally, offended a cultivator who was worshiped by a wealthy family and was forced to give up everything and run away to Little Meng City. Now I will spend the rest of my life in this deserted land. I was simply at the wrong place at the wrong time, but I guess it was my fate. Those cultivators... why are they so strong?”

Wu Qi was listening attentively to Zhang Hu’s story, trying to get more

valuable information, when, suddenly, he heard a rapid clatter from within the woods at the opposite side of the river. A line of fire torches, resembling of a long snake, was moving slowly in the direction of the village.

The barbarian hunters who were fixing the suspension bridge sounded out an alarm and many villagers, with grief and indignation on their faces, immediately rushed out from Meng village.

Not long after that, a large group of cavalry appeared on the opposite side of the river. The cavalrymen were all wearing the same black cloth and black armor and riding on animals which looked like horse or deer with gold and green stripes all over their bodies, full of strength and grandeur. These rides were restlessly hitting the ground with their hoofs. When their hooves hit the ground, a large amount of sparks were produced.

A strong deep voice came from the line of cavalry.

“Where are the elders of Meng village? We, the Third Battalion of the Heavenly Guards from Little Meng City, receiving an order to stand guard in Meng village!”

Zhang Hu, who was a bit slow because of alcohol, shouted out in surprise, “What? That damn stingy governor... since when did he become so generous and send a battalion of guards here to Meng village? Isn’t he the one who said that, due to insufficient tax income, he can’t afford the extra cost of troops?”

Shaking his head, Zhang Hu frowned and said, “Even if he wants to

send guards here, can't they come here during the day? The distance between Little Meng City and here is not more than five hundred miles. A raptor can run for two thousand miles a day. They could reach Meng village within four hours... Why do they need to journey at night? It looks like-... hmm!"

Wu Qi asked with a low voice, "Looks like what? Big brother Zhang Hu?"

Zhang Hu curled his lips and muttered in a low voice, "It looks like there's a superior officer coming, and the governor is sending out the battalion to make himself look good."

While two men were muttering in low voices, the suspension bridge had been lowered down.

The Third Battalion of the Heavenly Guards from Little Meng City have five hundred elite soldiers, and all of them are, at least, 2.5 meters tall, have strong and sturdy bodies, and even have an intrepid manner that the villagers of Meng village don't possess. They also have very nice armors on their body and some good weapons, making Zhang Hu feel a lot of envy.

This troop of elite soldiers rode into the village slowly, the villagers of Meng village can't help but greet them with cheers, washing off the atmosphere of grief that had been covering the village.

With these five hundred elite soldiers from Little Meng City stationed here, by utilizing the geographical advantages of the Meng village, unless there are more than four thousand barbarians who bluntly attack them without caring for their own life, Meng village will be safe from

danger from now on.

Wu Qi also nodded his head. with this cavalry army stationed here, he can leave the Meng village with peace of mind.

It is now the time for him to enter the rest of this world.

Chapter 12 – The Traveler

Chariots rumble and roll and horses whinny and neigh.

The sky was a deep clear blue and not a cloud was in sight. Two huge eagles are soaring high up in the sky. They seem to be circling the group moving on the ground.

There was rain a few days ago, so the road that lead to Little Meng City had accumulated almost a foot of thick mud. Although the skies had been clear for the last two days, the mud is still not completely dried up. As such, wheels and hooves could easily get stuck, requiring the horses to use great strength for every step they took.

Due to the strong sunlight constantly baking the muds, the surrounding air filled with a weird pungent smell. This weird pungent smell is like some rotten meat left to ferment in a clay pot. The smell seemed to be able to enter one's body through their pores, making it inescapable.

An army of two hundred horsemen is escorting seven gold engraved coaches, though they are moving quite slowly, due to the muddy road. Sometimes a few of their horses slip on the mud, which always brought scolding and cursing from the riders on their back. Some of the more bad-tempered riders would fiercely whip their horses when this happened.

All seven of the coaches are extremely luxurious. The leading six coaches each have four wheels and are each being dragged by four pure white horses.

As for the last and biggest coach, it doesn't have a single wheel. The whole coach is floating three feet above the ground and is being dragged by four pure black rhinos. These rhinos are a very rare species. Green spots dot their black skin and they have three curvy horns on their head. The horns shimmer like amber, full of strength and grandeur.

The internal decoration of this floating coach is simply luxurious. It is just like a large bedroom.

It has a soft bed, a long study table, two book shelves, and four bronze censers placed at each corner of the coach. There's even a thick carpet on the floor and various fine decorations. Although it is on the road, it still provides extremely luxurious comfort to those who ride in it.

Lu Chengfeng is sitting behind the study table with unkempt hair, barely able to keep his sleepy eyes open. He is staring blankly at the lower tier magical item 'Little 25th Lamp' in front of him. The magical lamp is the size of a fist and is made from purple gold and shaped like a toad. It's slightly opened mouth spits out a tiny hair size thread of red flame, a soy bean sized Silver Essence is floating within the flame and melting slowly.

This piece of Silver Essence is small, but it cost Lu Chengfeng three hundred white silver to extract and purify it. It contains a thread of concentrated Western Great White Gold gas in it. Due to the class of the silver and Lu Chengfeng's skill level, the extracted Silver Essence contains only a very thin amount of concentrated gas, and the quality is very poor, but still, it is the gas of Great White Gold.

Lower tier magical item ‘Little 25th Lamp’, this is a treasure that Lu Chengfeng spent all his wealth on, as long he puts a fire stone in it, it will spit out a thread of primordial fire. Of course, with sufficient cultivation level, he could use his own energy to ignite the magical lamp and obtain the fire, it’s just that Lu Chengfeng’s skill level is not high enough for him to do that.

The strength of the fire ignited using the fire stone is not very high, and also very unstable. This piece of Silver Essence had been melting for more than 14 hours, but only 99% of it was melted. The last drop of it, which is the heart of the essence and contains the gas of Great White Gold, refuses to melt, no matter how it burns.

Filled with impatience and anger, Lu Chengfeng gritted his teeth savagely and formed a seal with both of his hands. He made up his mind and bit hard on his tongue, then he spit out a mouthful of blood essence into the magical lamp. A noise like blowing wind came from the lamp and then the fire in the magical lamp suddenly become stronger, turning from the size of a hair to the size of a matchstick. The Silver Essence floating in the fire melted instantly, turning into a half transparent silver droplet.

Lu Chengfeng was filled with joy, and he hurriedly reached over to a stone stick, the size of a baby's arm[A], and, with his right hand, carefully grabbing a set of tweezers made from purple gold. He moved the tweezers to the silver droplet, then he grabbed it and carefully pulled it out from the lamp.

A very fine silver thread was pulled out from the silver droplet, the shining silver thread was floating in the air like a shadow.

Lu Chengfeng did not dare to be the slightest bit negligent. He hurriedly pulled the silver thread and inserted it into a carved pattern on the stone stick. Using the tweezers, he kept pulling, stretching, lifting, and pointing the silver thread around the stone stick. There were three simple golden dagger symbols with twelve stems that connected them on the stone stick, which was slowly filled up by the silver thread.

Due to not being very skillful on the task, the silver thread was broken three times in the process of insertion, causing some imperfections on the carved symbols and stems. But overall, it was still a smooth process, the formations on the stone stick were finally completed, and it didn't turn into a ruined formation.

After he was done using the Silver Essence thread, he inserted three bean size Earth Stones into the core position of the Golden Dagger symbols. Lu Chengfeng put down the tweezers, held the stone stick with both of his hands, and starting uttering some incantation. He slowly injected his energy into the stone stick, initiating the magical power of the formation.

The stone stick was made from low tier Earth attributed 'Ancient Stone' and already contained powerful Earth energy. After being carved with Metal attributed symbols, and using some Earth stones to initiate the formation, a formation pillar for use in laying the 'Great White Golden Dagger Formation' is ready.

The 'Great White Golden Dagger Formation' is a Metal attributed formation. Using the Earth attribute stone stick as the foundation, by utilizing the inter-promotion of the five elements[B], in which the Earth bears Metal, he initiated the 'Great White Golden' gas within the Silver Essence, turning it into golden daggers to attack his enemies. This is a basic formation that is used by lower rank cultivators in order to protect

their own lives and property.

With Lu Chengfeng being at the peak of the Houtian level, to be able to successfully produce the Great White Golden Dagger Formation, and to gather all the raw materials for it, is a difficult process.

Laughing with a weird 'Kah kah' sound, Lu Chengfeng took out two identical formation pillars from the lowest quality storage bag he had with him. Staring at the three formation pillars shining like silvery amber, he lay his tired body down on the soft bed.

"Ha. I'm now a general for Little Meng City. A city that is attacked by barbarians every two or three years. Basically, every couple of years a batch of officers will get killed. Sending me, a good for nothing man, here. I suppose their intention is for me to die here?"

Laughing at himself, Lu Chengfeng tightly clenched onto the three formation pillars, a crazy look suddenly appearing in his eyes.

"But I am not willing to accept this! I, Lu Chengfeng, will not die in this place! Sooner or later, I will walk straight up back into the Lu family in Li Yang, and teach all of you bastards who I, Lu Chengfeng, am!"

Clenching his fists, Lu Chengfeng, like a wounded tiger, roars out in angry and deep voice.

The insulation of the coach is pretty good, thus, those cavalrymen outside of the coach never hear anything from inside.

Keeping the formation pillars, Lu Chengfeng shuts the ‘Little 25th Lamp’ and carefully stows it away. Lifting up the curtains on the window, he glared at the two hundred cavalrymen escorting him. Lu Chengfeng shakes his head in disdain.

Of these two hundred cavalry guards, every single one of them is tall and handsome, wearing nice armors and carrying good weapons. But they are all idiots, all of them are good for nothing. Not a single one of them had broken through a cultivation level in ten years. Lu Chengfeng, who had the cultivation level of peak level Houtian Grade, can easily defeat fifty of them at once. If he were to lay down the Great White Gold Dagger Formation, he could easily kill all of these scum bags.

These are the guards his family gave him. Yet they expect him to be able to depend upon and use them to open up a new world for himself in the worthless Little Meng City?

A fury expression lit up Lu Chengfeng’s face. He suddenly lifted up his curtain and spit onto a cavalryman’s face, roaring fiercely, “Get out of here, out, out! Clueless fool, you are blocking your master’s sunlight, are you looking to get killed?”

The cavalryman was absolutely terrified and quickly hopped off his ride and grabbed the reins to pull his ride to the side.

Although he is a good for nothing man of the Li Yang’s Lu family, Lu Chengfeng still holds the lives of these cavalrymen in his hand. Even their family members and relatives, all the life of their bloodline are controlled by Lu Chengfeng. When facing the angry Lu Chengfeng, who would dare to say a word?

After releasing his anger, Lu Chengfeng walked out from the coach while clenching his teeth, standing beside the coachman and staring blankly at the two eagles that were floating high above his head.

Remaining silent for some time, Lu Chengfeng asked, in an indifferent tone, “Xiao Hei, how far are we from Little Meng City?”

The coachman is a nearly three-meter tall muscular man with dark skin. Hearing Lu Chengfeng’s question, the dark-skin man, with an ugly face full of scars, shows a gentle smile on his face, he answers with respect, “Young master, in another two hundred miles we’ll be reaching Little Meng City.”

Smiling and clasping on Xiao Hei’s muscular, rock-like shoulder, Lu Chengfeng said with a smile, “Work harder, we must reach Little Meng City today.”

From one of the coaches in front, a short and think, having similar dark skin old man trembling and walks out from the coach, carrying a bowl of milk in his hand, came to Lu Chengfeng’s coach. Lifted up that bowl of milk with a respect manner, the old man smiled and said, “Young master, you’re burning the midnight oil again, please have a bowl of human medicine!”

Lu Chengfeng look at that gold plated big bowl hatefully, shaking his head and he grabs over the bowl, gulped the milk in a swallow.

A strong aroma of medicine hits right onto his throat, Lu Chengfeng almost vomits out. He forced himself to get used to this discomfort,

quietly feeling the energy rise up after the milk entered his stomach.

Although he hates human medicine the most, but he had to admit that, without this human medicine, he won't have enough energies to complete that three formation pillars continuously.

In order to make human medicine you needed to find human women that were still breast-feeding, force them to consume a huge amount of various herbs, and use a secret method to channel the most essential part of those herbs into their breasts, dripping it out together with the breast milk. This is the human medicine. This type of tonic is quite common among all the wealthy and influential families. It is claimed that this is the most effective way to get rid of those harmful ingredients in the herbs.

Lu Chengfeng hates this kind of human medicine, but he had no choice but to drink it. If not ,he won't be able to finish making the formation pillars, and he will not be confident in his ability to secure his position in Little Meng City.

Handing over the big bowl back to the old man, Lu Chengfeng sighed, shaking his head.

He said to himself with a low voice, "After all, I was born by you too, why are you treating me like this? Why must you pass your sin onto me? Those bastards, no matter what, I'm still your elder brother who born by the same mother, why must you all force this on me?"

Before he can finish his words, those two eagles in the sky suddenly let out a sharp cry.

From the woods beside the road came the sound of a wooden clapper.

'Buzz', sounds of releasing strings came from the woods, and a hundred-fifty strong arrows shot out from the woods, like some crazy bumble bees.

Lu Chengfeng's two hundred guards were startled, nearly seventy over men were hit by the arrows, screaming and falling off their rides.

Fifty men who are wearing tight black cloth and have their face covered, only show a pair of eyes, carrying long blades in their hands and dashing out like a wild wind.

The leading man in black pointed at Lu Chengfeng and shouted, "Go, chop his left hand!"

When he heard 'chop his left hand', Lu Chengfeng pale face was immediately covered with a ferocious expression.

"Must you really force me to go this far?"

Screaming can be heard everywhere. Lu Chengfeng's guards were defeated instantly. In a short moment, another thirty over men were killed.

The rest of the guards are screaming aloud, many even control their rides and turned around out of instinct, dispersing into all directions.

Veins stand out on the back of Lu Chengfeng's hand, and his body is trembling violently.

The man in black had now arrived in front of him.

Notes:

[A] - This was legitimately in the raws...

[B] - This is the five elements (also known as Wu Xing). Some elements have a supporting or generating relation with each other. This is one of those cases. (The Earth bears Metal. You find metal in the earth.)

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wu_Xing

Chapter 13 - Strike

A few hundred villagers from Meng village were pushing some carts down a path in the woods. They were being escorted by Zhang Hu and his fellow barbarian hunters.

There were over thirty of these push carts. The heads of the dead barbarians were piled up high in the carts. The pungent smell of blood was mixed in with some unknown herbal smell. The smell was terrible enough to drive one into unconsciousness. In order to avoid the rotten heads spreading disease, the elders of Meng village had soaked these heads in some herbal mixture, causing this horrible pungent smell.

They had nearly two thousand barbarian heads. According to the reward that was posted in Little Meng City, these would amount to a lot of money.

The barbarian hunters and the villagers of Meng village had come to an agreement. After sending these heads to Little Meng City, they would split the reward money. The payout would be large enough to make up for all the losses of Meng village and also enough for these barbarian hunters to live a few months in pleasure, being showered with booze and women.

Wu Qi was sitting on the shaft of a push cart, he was carefully trimming the end of an arrow with his dagger, making the feathered tail round and flat. Inside his beast skin bag, there are more than a hundred trimmed arrows. The tips of these arrows were shining with a lurid glow.

This is the thorn from the poisonous tree, ‘Antiaris’, which grows deep within Little Meng Mountain. The thorn is harder than metal, sharper than a blade, and carries poison naturally. Those barbarians love to use these tree thorns as their arrow tips. Wu Qi gathered hundreds of them and trimmed the tails. He planned to use them as daggers that he can throw using bare hands, which should cause serious damage.

In this world without any guns or modern weapons, Wu Qi can only use whatever he can find, making them into his own defense.

Although he inherited the Scroll of Stealing, he knew, from his conversation with Zhang Hu, that this world is a complicated place. Only being at the peak of the Houtian cultivation level, he simply can’t live the life he wanted to live.

Satisfied with the last tree thorn he trimmed, Wu Qi carefully placed it into the beast skin bag and tied up the bag with a beast tendon.

Turning his head and looking at the mountains behind him, Wu Qi raised both his hands and waved few times.

Good bye Meng village!

Wu Qi and the others had left Meng village yesterday morning. The distance from Meng village to Little Meng City was about five hundred miles. For those soldiers who were riding Raptors, it would only take them five to six hours. But with so many heavy push carts in the group, their speed simply can’t be all that fast.

The mud road came to an end. The group had officially left the mountain. After following a proper road and walking for another two hundred miles, they should arrive at Little Meng City. As he was told by Zhang Hu, Little Meng City has a population of over two hundred thousand people. It is the biggest city for several hundred miles.

Out of these two hundred thousand people, only a few thousand are permanent residents of the city, the rest are barbarian hunters, rogues, and all sorts of traders. There were even some on the run killers, bandits, thieves, con men, and scoundrels. Zhang Hu didn't have to say anything more. Wu Qi can already imagine what kind of city it is.

The village men at the front of their convoy cheered. They had finally left the woods and were walking on the real road outside of the mountain.

The speed of their convoy became slower and slower. Wu Qi was sitting on the shaft, staring at the thick mud on the road, and his face had a dark expression. So this is the official road that connected Little Meng City to other cities? From the condition of this road, Wu Qi was a little bit disappointed in this shit place. What kind of damn world had he actually come to?

The Meng villagers and barbarian hunters were used to this road's condition. No matter if they were barefoot or wearing boots, they just walked like on the thick mud like it was no big deal, especially those men from Meng village.

The color of the mud is really weird, it even mixed with some unknown weird stuff, like some dead rats, bugs, and other strange things. Wu Qi's face kept getting darker and darker. His whole body was covered with

goosebumps.

After he absorbed Le Xiao Bai's soul particles, besides obtaining his insane knowledge, Wu Qi had also inherited his addiction to cleanliness. Shaking his head helplessly, Wu Qi forced himself to focus all his attention on the mud.

If he had to live in this world, then he needed to get used to everything here. If he can't even stand this little muddy road, how will he be able to live on in this world?

Taking a deep breath, Wu Qi grabbed the beast skin bag and got off the push cart. Then he went up to those men from Meng village and walking together with them on the muddy road. The mud quickly soaked through his crude sandals, sticking to his feet. Wu Qi smiled as he recalled a scene from when he was just eleven or twelve years old, where he was fighting for his life against some wild beasts in a coliseum full of mud.

Today what Wu Qi is facing is a place a million times more dangerous than those wild beasts, but also a million times more exciting, as it is a brand new world!

Breath in, breath out, breath in again, breath out again. While Wu Qi was walking, he was chatting with those villagers with a smile on his face. The innate cold qi in the veins on his arm kept getting thicker. Without wasting any time, he silently circulated this qi according to the 'Source of Water Chapter' skill.

The water elemental qi hovering in the surrounding area started to flow

toward Wu Qi. It went through the center of his palms and quickly entered his veins.

Other cultivation scripts required one to refining qi in order to be able to use said qi. Once these natural energies entered Wu Qi's body, they immediately became a part of the innate water qi within his body. The Scroll of Stealing. Once you have something in your hand, then it becomes yours. Why should you have to refine the qi?

With just this special characteristic alone, the cultivation speed of the Scroll of Stealing, comparing to any other cultivation script, is at least ten times faster!

Clearly feeling his cultivation level increasing bit by bit, Wu Qi was happily listening to those men from Meng village boasting about their sexual conquests when he suddenly heard a terrible scream came from in front of them.

Dozens of horses were dashing towards them. On those rides are pale-faced men wearing luxurious clothing and armor. They were screaming like some lost mongrels, fleeing without looking at where they are heading.

These cavalrymen were dressed shabbily. Along the way, some of them were taking off their armor and throwing it away. Some even threw their weapons down, hoping to lighten their burden so they can run faster. Behind those cavalrymen, seven to eight men in black were carrying bows and arrows. Without any hesitation, like they were doing target practice, they placed arrows on their bow strings and then shot the arrows out.

In the blink of an eye, dozens of cavalrymen were struck down by the arrows, howling and falling from their rides. When these men hit the ground, mud was thrown a good distance by the heavy impacts. As if there was poison on the arrows, right after these men touched the ground, their faces became black and their bodies became motionless.

Wu Qi and his group bumped into these cavalrymen head to head, these cavalrymen were scared and had lost their minds, screaming in fear While riding fast, these cavalrymen were still cursing madly, “Outta my way, you bunch of peasants! Outta my way!”

Slowly reacting, due to shock, a few men from Meng village, who were standing in front of the convoy, got knocked down by the fleeing cavalrymen. These horses were extremely strong, thus, the force of impact was so huge that it caused the men from Meng village to fly back a few feet away and spit out blood. Their chests were obviously crushed.

“Kill them!”

The villagers from Meng village were raised within the mountains. They had a long history of fighting with barbarians and all kinds of wild beasts and poisonous bugs. In another word, they are brutal and strong. Looking at these fleeing cavalrymen, who were being so unreasonable, the leader of villagers shouted loudly, and took out his weapon.

The several hundred men from Meng village took out their blades and swords and rushed, like a tsunami, onto those cavalrymen.

Shouts of ‘hey hey’ were coming from the scene and the tens of fleeing

cavalrymen fell onto the ground. The legs of their rides were chopped off by villagers. Those cavalrymen were chopped up into chunks of meat.

In just a blink of an eye, all the fleeing cavalrymen were killed by villagers from Meng village.

As the villagers raised their weapons high up and began to cheer, the man in black, who were pursuing the cavalrymen, started to shoot their arrows toward the villagers. The sound of strong bows 'twanging' was heard, then arrows deeply penetrated into the bodies of a few villagers.

The poison on the arrows was really strong and thus these villagers never really had a chance to make a noise. After struggling for a second, they fell down on the ground, motionless.

It all happened so quickly that the villagers had no time to prepare themselves. They stared blankly at their men who were lying on the ground, stunned.

Wu Qi was the first one who reacted. While those men in black were busy reloading their arrows, he cursed and started running toward those men in black. Wu Qi's speed is not really all that fast but was not all that slow either. After a few leaps, he had shortened the distance between him and those men in black to no less than ten feet.

He put his hand into the beast skin bag and grabbed few trimmed arrows, placing them securely between his fingers. Wu Qi waved his hand effortlessly and the innate water qi in his arms flowed into the arrows, then a few blue ray shot out, striking at the necks of five men in black.

The approximately 1.5 meters long arrows impaled the necks of the five men in black. These men looked at Wu Qi with expressions that said they could not believe what had just happened. Holding their necks tightly with both hands, they fell down on the ground with blank expressions.

The last three men in black stared at Wu Qi in shock. One of them angrily shouted, “Peasant, you dare to hurt our men?”

Without saying a word, Wu Qi walked forward and pulled an arrow out from the neck of one of the men, and then he quickly thrust it forward at high speed a couple dozen times. The three men in black can’t see Wu Qi’s movements. They just see some fast movements and then feel a cold breeze sweep through their bodies, then the thorn had pierced through their bodies, making them be full of holes.

“Peasant? Are you calling yourself noble? A dead man is simply rotting meat!”

With a grin on his face, Wu Qi kicked the head of the man who scolded him just now.

The sounds of weapons clashing came from just around the bend of the road. Wu Qi turned his head and listened. With a frown, he started to run towards the source of the noise.

Zhuang Hu and his men had, by now, caught up. He grabbed at Wu Qi’s shoulder and said, “Brother, you should not get yourself involved in this matter.”

Zhang Hu’s fingertips had touched on Wu Qi’s shoulder, but, as if there’s a layer of oil on Wu Qi’s shoulder, his fingers slipped.

Wu Qi turned his head around and gave Zhang Wu a smile, then he sped up and leaped forward toward the source of the noise.

Zhang Hu stamped his feet, cursed in a low voice, and chased after Wu Qi.

Chapter 14 - Recruitment

When Wu Qi arrived at the other side of the bend in the road, he saw a group of men in black who had dispersed the guards who were supposed to be escorting the coaches. These men in black were now charging toward Lu Chengfeng.

The leader of these men in black was shouting loudly, ordering his men to chop off Lu Chengfeng's left hand!

Wu Qi was standing ten feet away when he saw the leader of men swing his blade at Lu Chengfeng, Wu Qi took a deep breath and dashed forward. As he looked at Lu Chengfeng,he saw the coach that Lu Chengfeng was standing on. His vision paused and he stared at it for a moment.

Those six leading coaches can only be described as luxurious, but the floating coach that Lu Chengfeng on. Only those who were either extremely wealthy or young masters from influential families can have this kind of coach.

What did being a wealthy man or a young master from influential family mean to Wu Qi? It meant resources, power, and implied they had a lot of stuff that interested Wu Qi! He had inherited the Scroll of Stealing, there's nothing that can interest him back in Meng village, but there must be something this wealthy young master had that would bring him benefits!

A bright light shined within Wu Qi's eyes after he circulated some innate water Qi into them. He quickly glanced at the men in black.

The cultivation level of these men in black was quite good, however, Wu Qi didn't think it was that big of a deal. The only one of note was the leader, whose cultivation was close to the peak of the Houtian Warrior grade, the rest of the men were just barely above average, being at par with the cultivation levels of Zhuang Hu's barbarian hunters.

On the contrary, Lu Chengfeng, who was panicking when he saw the blade thrusting toward him, possessed 30% more qi than Wu Qi. There is even a fist-sized red glowing object hidden close to his chest, which Wu Qi sensed some danger from.

While laughing out loud, Wu Qi grabbed dozens of trimmed arrows in his hand and shouted, "How dare you rob travelers in broad daylight? Do you consider yourself above the law?" While shouting, Wu Qi had thrown out the trimmed arrows in his hand in the direction of these men in black.

Both of Lu Chengfeng's hands were hiding in his sleeves and about to take out the Great White Golden Dagger formation. When he saw Wu Qi, he shouted, "Help, help! I am the eldest son from Lu family of Liyang, and am also the new General of Little Meng City! Save me and I'll reward you handsomely!"

The trimmed arrows flew fast, forcing the men in black give up attacking Lu Chengfeng and defend themselves.

There were some good fighters among these men in black, and they were able to touch the arrows with their blade. However, these arrows

carried a force that caused them to spin really fast. When the blades touched them the arrows would spin around the blade and fly past it.

Except for the leader of men in black, who managed to knock the arrow away, the arrows had hit all the men in black and came out from their back.

Wu Qi dropped his beast skin bag and, with lightning speed, struck out with both hands to attack the leader.

Wu Qi didn't inject the innate water qi onto the arrow that flew toward the leader, because the leader himself cultivated with a water elemental skill. With the innate water qi in his eyes, Wu Qi saw a fist-sized white color qi orb residing in the leader's dantian. He also saw a blue colored qi flowing through his veins.

Wu Qi used the 'Hand of Web' skill as he struck out towards the leader's head. The cold qi contains within the innate water qi burst out from his palm at the same time. The cultivation level of the leader was close to Wu Qi's, but when the cold qi covered him, he was instantly frozen and unable to move even the tiniest bit.

Wu Qi pressed one of his hands onto the leader's dantian, then he placed another hand onto his 'TanZhong' acupuncture point. Using the' Palm of Picking Stars', he twisted his palm and initiated the force of absorption. The qi of the leader, which he had cultivated for nearly sixty years and was approaching the peak of the Houtian Warrior grade, started to flow aggressively out into Wu Qi's palm.

In just a blink of an eye, all the qi in the leader had depleted, a fraction

of his qi essence was absorbed by Wu Qi at the same time. Wu Qi retracted his hand and immediately struck the leader's face, a gradual force burst out from it, damaging the leader's brain. Blood exploded out from all seven apertures of the leader. He is a dead meat now.

Swiftly drawing a circle in front of himself, Wu Qi had searched through every single part of the leader's body, and transferred over all the items he found into a little leather bag tied around his waist. Wu Qi was a disciple of the Darkhand Sect. He is also a cultivator who had inherited the Scroll of Stealing. There is no way that he would leave anything behind for others to benefit from.

For ordinary warriors, after they cultivated their internal qi for ten years, they would reach a level called the Ten-years Stage.

For those who possessed extraordinary talents, after cultivating their internal qi for sixty years, they would have reached the peak of the Houtian Warrior grade. With that, they can try to break through the "Governor and Conception" vessel, reaching the level of 'Xiantian'.

Wu Qi had inherited Scroll of Stealing, and all the innate water qi in the Sect Elder Token had been absorbed into his body. However, most of the energy was used to protect his body in the Universal Portal of Great Dimensional Shifting, therefore, the innate water qi he had right now is only equal to a peak level Houtian Warrior.

After absorbed all the qi of the leader, which had cost the leader of men in black over fifty years of cultivation, Wu Qi immediately felt the increase of coldness in his arm. Within the Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries which located in his arms, the innate water qi had turned into a whirlpool. It kept absorbing water elemental qi from outside his body.

In a short moment, Wu Qi's internal qi almost doubled.

When a peak Houtian Warrior had his qi doubled, and he was cultivating with any other method, he would have broken through to Xiantian stage. But the Scroll of Stealing is no ordinary skill. It can't be compared with any ordinary skill. The suddenly increased qi followed the water qi vein and circulated the entire vein three times. half of the innate water qi was absorbed by it, making the water qi veins become even more resilient.

The Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries, residing within Wu Qi's arms, are the foundation of the magical power and skill from Scroll of Stealing. Therefore, when he was in the foundation stage, his priority was to strengthen the Seven Stealing Heaven Arteries. Now that the water qi vein had been strengthened, the limit of the qi it can store and the speed of qi circulating had doubled. Wu Qi felt a comfortable, cool sensation throughout his entire body.

It all happened in a very short time, Wu Qi breathed in comfortably, palmed his fist, and bowed to Lu Chengfeng, saying, "Greeting, young master. I am Wu Qi."

With a curious look in his eyes, Lu Chengfeng evaluated Wu Qi, then he glanced at those men in black, who had been killed by Wu Qi. He hurriedly jumped off the coach, and tightly grabbed onto Wu Qi's hand.

"There's no need for such politeness. Wu Qi, if not for your help, I would be a dead man right now!"

Lu Chengfeng kicked on the leader's corpse and threw a look of hatred at the scattered bodies. He shouted, "Xiaohei! Go and get those useless fools who leave their master behind and flee and bring them back here!"

The dark skinned coachman answered with a deep voice. With an alerted look in his eyes he gazed at Wu Qi, then he stood up slowly, took out a tiny bone whistle and blew into it.

The high pitched sound of whistle reached far. After a little bit of time, the cavalrymen started returning. After nearly fifteen minutes, only twenty over cavalrymen ran back with a long face, standing in front of Lu Chengfeng while having their body trembling.

Lu Chengfeng refused to look at these 'guards'. he just showed his dissatisfaction by coughing a few times and sneering.

While holding Wu Qi's hand, Lu Chengfeng expressed his gratitude repeatedly, but, his hand kept holding on Wu Qi, never showing a sign of letting go.

Wu Qi stared at Lu Chengfeng embarrassedly, he thought, maybe this is the way Lu Chengfeng expressed his gratitude and friendliness but having his hand held by a man intimately, no matter Wu Qi, Wu Wang, or Le Xiao Bai, who had their souls merged with Wu Qi, none of them liked this experience. Back on Earth, it was very easy to create a misunderstanding if two men held each other's hands for a long time.

However, when Wu Qi gazed at the floating coach behind Lu Chengfeng, he forced himself to gave up the idea of slapping Lu Chengfeng and robbing him of all his belongings. Wu Qi thought to

himself, he had just come to this world, he had to maintain a low profile, at least, before he understands the background of Lu Chengfeng, he can't just take away all his belongings.

Letting out a hoarse laughter, Wu Qi chats reluctantly with Lu Chengfeng.

Zhang Hu had arrived with his barbarian hunters and villagers from Meng village, while Wu Qi was talking with Lu Chengfeng hypocritically, he and his barbarian hunters were tidying the corpses of men in black. They placed fifty corpses in a line, all the belongs including their bows and blades were gathered aside.

Wu Qi was dragged by Lu Chengfeng to the front of these corpses.

Except for the corpse of the leader of men in black, the rest of the bodies shrunk into a small meatball, a thick, black blood stain covering them, and their faces were barely recognizable.

Lu Chengfeng pulled off the mask on the face of the leader, when he saw his face, a weird expression appeared on Lu Chengfeng's face. Both dark-skinned men, Xiaohei and Laohei, saw the face of the leader too, and they too had strange expressions on their faces, Xiaohei even spit on the corpse to express his anger.

With a sneered, Lu Chengfeng grabbed a blade and chopped continuously on the face of that leader, making it into a mashed and no one would able to recognize him anymore.

Breathed out a sigh of relief, Lu Chengfeng threw the blade aside, again grabbed on Wu Qi's hand, staring in Wu Qi's eyes with a serious expression.

"Wu Qi, we've really hit it off. Can I ask you something?"

Wu Qi glimpsed at Zhang Wu, who was playing with a bow afar. Without raising his head, Zhang Hu shook his head continuously.

Wu Qi understood what Zhang Hu was trying to tell him, Lu Chengfeng is the young master from some wealthy and influential family, and he was ambushed on his journey. This simply meant a pool of deep water. Zhang Hu understood how bad the consequences would be if Wu Qi got his feet wet in this matter, that's why he suggested that Wu Qi not involve himself any further.

However, how would Zhang Hu ever understand what's in Wu Qi's mind?

Holding on to Lu Chengfeng's hand, Wu Wi asked with an indifferent tone, "Please enlighten me, young master."

Lu Chengfeng breathed out a long sigh, he glanced at the trembling guards beside, with a sneered, he said, "The purpose of Chengfeng for the trip is to attend my job, however, I was escorted with a bunch of useless fools. I felt really insecure by having my safety taken care of by them. Wu Qi is a mighty warrior, you have killed all the enemies by yourself. Therefore I, Chengfeng, wish to recruit you, Wu Qi, as my servant."

Lu Chengfeng let go of Wu Qi's hand and bowed deeply, in a sincere manner, and said, "With utmost sincerity, I hope warrior Wu Qi can agree to my request."

"Hmm, to become your servant..."

Wu Qi placed his fingers on his chin.

Wu Qi remained silent briefly, then with a smile, he said, "I agree to become your servant. My teacher once told me, it is actually a good career to become a servant for a wealthy family!"

Zhuang Hu who stood aside shook his head, gently stamped his feet.

Lu Chengfeng was overwhelmed by great joy, then, he grabbed on Wu Qi's hand again.

"Obtaining support from warrior Wu Qi is like a good rain after a long drought!"

Wu Qi let out a loud fit of laughter and shook Lu Chengfeng's hand repeatedly.

Chapter 15 - The Mayor

At the end of the road, Little Meng City came into sight.

As Little Meng City came into view, Wu Qi felt disappointed. It was surrounded by a three foot tall wall built of rammed earth. It also had a low city gate, a big flag twisting on a pole on top of said city gate, and a few languished guards standing in front of the gate. A desolate place, that was his first impression of Little Meng City.

When Wu Qi got close enough to the city gate, he saw some weeds had grown on the city wall, billowing in the breeze happily. Not only that, there was also a two foot tall bush growing on top of the city gate. Wu Qi also saw dozens of fist-size berries hiding amongst the bushes branches.

Wu Qi breathed in sharply through his teeth.

Lu Chengfeng's expression turned awful when he saw the city wall. he tilted his head and just stared at it. It seemed like he couldn't believe what he was seeing. After some time, he let out a depressed sigh, put on a smile on his face, and said, "Wu Qi, it is fortunate that I have not become the Mayor of this city. Instead I have been appointed as a General! Don't you think you should congratulate me?"

Wu Qi gave Lu Chengfeng a gaze, then said, in a similarly disenchanted voice, "Congratulation, young master. You really are lucky for not becoming the Mayor of Little Meng City! But why did they build this crumbling city here?"

At this moment, Zhang Hu came by, riding on his ride and, with a loud voice, said, “Because of the herbs, minerals, timber, beast skin, meat, and barbarians!”

Pointing at the Little Meng City, Zhang Hu explained its situation like a man who knows everything.

Meng Mountain is rich in resources that no one can neglect. Therefore, the Lu Kingdom, which ruled the land that Meng Mountain was on, specifically built a city at its perimeter as the hub for the collection and distribution of resources. No only this, the Lu Kingdom frequently suffered attacks from barbarians near Meng Mountain. Having a city built here can be considered a first line of defense, so, when those barbarians attacked again, Little Meng City would be able to alert Lu Kingdom to the threat.

Because of this tough situation, there’s barely fifty thousand permanent residents in Little Meng City, but there are more than two hundred thousand floating residents, who are earning their living here. Not only this, there are three battalions of soldiers, Heavenly, Earth, and Mortal, which grouped into twelve companies for a total of eight thousand warriors that are stationed here permanently.

An army of eight thousand soldiers. For any other prosperous city in the Lu Kingdom, this would be a strange arrangement.

“Ah! I See!” Lu Chengfeng nodded his head thoughtfully, then said, “Even back in Liyang City, where the Lu family resided, there were only three thousand soldiers. This small city has an army of eight thousand

soldiers. No wonder they need a General here!"

Soon they had come to the front of City Gate, then, Zhang Hu hold his fist to Lu Chengfeng and Wu Qi.

"Brother Wu Qi, young master Lu, we'll say goodbye here! Brother Wu Qi, Little Meng City is not a big city. If there is anything you need, just come and look for me. All my brothers and I are staying at the 'Vigorous Tiger Residence'! That's our base!"

Zhang Hu bid goodbye to Wu Qi in a loud, emphatic voice, without looking at Lu Chengfeng. Then, together with his men, they sped up their pace and entered into the city, riding the horses of those dead cavalrymen.

Awful expressions came over both Laohei and Xiaohei, their dark faces twisting with frowns.

Lu Chengfeng burst out laughing, then said, "This Zhang Hu is a good man with an interesting life story. But, the way he treated me. It was as if I was some poisonous bug or wild beast, showing that he is a wise man, but also a boring man. What do you think?" He looked at Wu Qi as he asked this.

As Wu Qi watched Zhang Hu disappear, said honestly, "I think brother Zhang Hu is a good man!"

Lu Chengfeng slapped his forehead, again laughing, and said, "I have to agree with you there. Never mind, these barbarian hunters will have to

deal with the City Guards Army, and I, as the General of the City Guard, will just take good care of them! Ha, aren't they going to have to buy all their armor and weapons from me?"

Wu Qi nodded his head, turning to look at Lu Chengfeng. So, the post of General is also in charge of the weapons in Little Meng City as well?

The villagers of Meng Village also waved at Wu Qi, then, with a fast pace, they pushed those push carts into the city. They, too, don't get along with Lu Chengfeng. They felt a huge gap between them and this young master from a wealthy family. No matter whether it was the way Lu Chengfeng talked or the way he handled things, they simply felt uncomfortable.

Especially since some of Lu Chengfeng's guards had wounded some villagers when they were fleeing for their lives. This made the villagers from Meng Village dislike him even more.

Although Lu Cheng Feng had generously paid a huge sum of money to these villagers for medical treatment, given all the horses of those dead cavalrymen to Zhang Hu, and even gave them all the weapons and money found on the men in black, but still, he couldn't win the hearts of these villagers. These simple villagers were of a one-track-mind. When Lu Chengfeng's guards hurt their men, he got the blame.

Breathing out a helpless sigh, Lu Chengfeng stared at Wu Qi and clapped his hand with a bitter smile.

Wu Qi shook his head, then pointed back over his shoulder at those cavalrymen, who were looking dejected and spiritless. He spoke with a

stiff tone, “Young master, you better think of some ways to recruit more people in Little Meng City, these men are useless. You might as well send them back and save on the food.”

Lu Chengfeng clapped his hand again, laughing out loud and said, “You’re right, they are supposed to be my guards. Having them here would just waste the army supplies. So be it, all of you, leave your rides behind and walk back to Liyang, help me inform lady lord that I’ve arrived at Little Meng City safely!”

When those guards heard what Wu Qi said, their expressions became dark, then, when they heard Lu Chengfeng’s order, an intention to kill Wu Qi immediately popped up in their minds. Leaving behind their rides and walking a thousand miles back to Liyang on their feet? Isn’t that a death sentence?

What’s worse, they were chased back by the young master, who they supposed to be protecting. What would the family think when they got back? They could recieve serious punishment if they really left the young master behind.

All the cavalrymen rolled around and crawled off their rides, hastening to kowtow in front of Lu Chengfeng, without caring about how dirty the ground was.

Wu Qi stared at them with a cold shoulder, with a gloomy face, he said, “Young master, it’s your call. Looks like they don’t take seriously on what you’ve just said!”

Lu Chengfeng’s face darkened with anger, he shouted at those

cavalrymen, “Leave your rides behind and get the hell out of here. Or do you want me to punish you all with the house rule?”

The cavalrymen trembled, then they looked at each other and dared not to say a word. They stood up and tidied up their weapons and belongings, then turned around and walked slowly back to where they came from.

With an indifferent tone, Wu Qi said, “Fleeing in front of bandits, that’s just cowardice. Abandoning their master, that’s disloyalty. Disobeying the order of their master, that’s the greatest sin. What’s the point of having these kinds of scumbags? They can’t prove themselves. Why doesn’t the young master just hire a team of useful men in Little Meng City. It would probably be cheaper too.”

Lu Chengfengn stared thoughtfully at Wu Qi, noddingd his head in agreement.

Wu Qi let out a bland smile, staring back into Lu Chengfeng’s eyes. Lu Chengfeng had an enduring and complicated visage, the bleary eyes were like looking at layers of impassable walls, hiding many secrets that are not known by others. On the other side, Wu Qi had a crystal clear sight, his eyes were glowing like the purest crystal, however, deep within his eyes was a ripple of deep blue, tranquil water. Under this was the life-sucking vortex.

Both of them put on smiles, then, at the same time, they turned their eyes toward the City Gate of Little Meng City.

All of sudden, come a pattering of the foot from within the city. A

marching army consist of more than three, four hundred soldiers was coming fast to the City Gate. A chubby man, walked difficulty at the front end of the parade, while whipping off some sweats on his forehead breathlessly.

"Is that young master from Lu Family? Oh, my lord General, you are finally here! The city guards of Little Meng City have finally gotten their master!"

From afar, this chubby man started to shout with his greasy and sickly sweet voice. Judging from what he said, it is obvious that he came to greet Lu Chengfeng.

When Wu Qi saw this chubby man's face, he saw a target ripe for the picking.

This guy had the height similar to those from Meng Village, about two meters tall, however, the diameter of his waist is almost two times of Wu Qi's height. His body is full of wobbling fat, even his ears, the most difficult place to have fat, had thick layers of fat, making them look like pig's ears.

The man's facial feature is even more astonishing. He had a pair of watery, amorous eyes, two times smaller than ordinary men's eyes. A pointed nose. Red, delicate and cherry-sized lips seated right below the center of his face.

A shiver ran down his back, and Wu Qi forced himself not to look further on this man's body. However, the thief in him quickly appraised everything on the man.

The cloth was made from premium quality silk. Wu Qi felt some relief, a place with premium quality silk. It shouldn't be a bad place.

His headwear was made from Purple Gold and was reflecting a golden sheen. Purple Gold is good stuff. it was stated in the Scroll of Stealing that Purple-Gold is a foundational material with many usages. To make a sword or magical items, cultivators would need to mix in a lot of Purple Gold. The chubby man had headwear made from Purple Gold. This tells Wu Qi that there is probably a Purple Gold mine nearby. It should be easy for him to gather a large amount of Purple Gold.

Three thumb-sized gems and four pearls were embroidered on the headwear. These blood-colored gems made anyone who stared at them feel warm. They are the gemstones containing fire elemental energy, which is important for cultivators.

Compared to the gemstones, pearls were just an ordinary item. There's no sea near to the Meng Mountain, therefore, having four pearls as the decoration on his headwear is something really luxurious. As for the gemstones, Wu Qi told himself he had to find out where they came from. Were they bought from somewhere else, or a product of Meng Mountain.

Besides this, the chubby man wore a jade belt on his waist. There was even a fist-sized, rounded, green colored jadestone right in the middle of it, which attracted Wu Qi's gaze. That's not an ordinary jadestone, it is a middle tier 'Green Nephrite Jadestone', belonging to the family of water elemental gemstones.

But, the man's most valuable item was the golden ring he wore on his

right thumb. The ring was decorated with a bean-sized, red crystal that shined mystically. Wu Qi's heart almost jumped out from his chest when he saw the ring.

The golden ring was made from 'Heavenly Gold', a top tier elemental material. With this little amount of Heavenly Gold, if mixed with other materials, it could yield a strong metal elemental magical item.

The decorative red crystal is a top tier 'Flaming Crystal' that can absorb floating fire elemental energy in the atmosphere by itself. This thing can be used in the aid of cultivation, or as the material to forge a top tier magical item.

Although this chubby man had strange facial features, he also had lots of treasures!

With a hospitable smile on his face, Wu Qi got off the coach, sped up his pace, and walked over to the chubby man, holding his fist and bowing to the chubby man.

"Greeting my lord, can I know your name?"

Wu Qi greeted the man and asked in a polite manner, behaving like a servant from a wealthy family.

The chubby man panted for a moment, then he squeezed a smile onto his face and spoke to Lu Chengfeng, "General Lu, I am your humble servant, the Mayor of the city, Yi Yan!"

Swallowing the lump in his throat and stepping forward, Yi Yan explained with a smile on his face, “Yi, as in ‘Zhou Yi’[1]; Yan, as in ‘Tian Ji Yan Hua’[2]. Your humble servant came from the Yan family in RuYang. Our family is friends with the Lu family!”

Lu Chengfeng smiled and got off the coach to greet the chubby man officially.

Wu Qi stared at the fair and plump Yi Yan with a pleasant smile, but in his heart he was laughing joyfully.

This chubby man was a walking treasure chest!

Notes:

[1] ‘Zhou Yi’ - Also known as I Ching, is an ancient divination text and oldest of the chinese classics.

[2] ‘Tian Ji Yan Hua’ - This means the unpredictable changes of the universe.

Chapter 16 – Provocation

With a humble, yet serious, expression, Wu Qi placed his hands behind his back, examining the men behind Yi Yan.

With the exception of Lu Chengfeng, who was to be the new General, standing beside Yi Yan were the three most important officers in Little Meng City: the Director of Records, The Director of Internal Affairs, and The Director of Security.

According to the law of the Great Yan Dynasty, who was the overlord of the Lu Kingdom, the task of the Mayor is to oversee everything in the city. The General is to handle everything related to the army. The Director of Records is in charge of supervising and recording the behaviors of all government officers. The Director of Internal Affairs is in charge of the economy and production. And the Director of Security is in charge of the handling crimes and the safety of the city. These four officers would report to the Mayor, but the Mayor can't interfere with their responsibilities. The rigidness and completeness of this system even allows them to supervise each other.

Little Meng City was located in a remote area which was surrounded by a vast virgin forest and mountain, however, because it can produce a lot of raw materials and minerals, these officers had been milking their fortune here. Wu Qi had seen how many precious items that Yi Yan was wearing, but, the Director of Records, the Director of Internal Affairs, and the Director of Security were also wearing a lot of gemstones and jewels on them.

Like he was looking at a very attractive woman, Wu Qi kept eyeing the

men surrounding Yi Yan, then he found more good stuff that he can 'acquire'. He kept rubbing his palms behind his back, while his fingers were trembling with excitement. It is broad daylight, so it is not the best time for him to steal from them. He would need to wait.

As the Mayor of the city, Yi Yan introduced those officers followed behind him to Lu Chengfeng. After listened to Yi Yan's introduction, Wu Qi's lips curved up, The Director of Records, the Director of Inter Affairs, and the Director of Security were all from the Yi family. They must be following Yi Yan here to make their fortune.

As Yi Yan introduced each officer, they stepped forward to greet Lu Chengfeng. Although the General is an important position, it doesn't deserve such respectful treatment. What's made Yi Yan come all the way to the city gate to welcome Lu Chengfeng is that he is the eldest son of the Lu Family from Liyang. As for the rest of the government officers, they came here for the same reason.

After some introductions and a speech that made Wu Qi want to fall asleep, Yi Yan held Lu Chengfeng's hand intimately and brought him to the Mayor's Mansion located in the middle of the city. All of the other officers surrounded both men, laughing and joking all the way, as if the entirety of Little Meng City was welcoming the new General, Lu Chengfeng.

Wu Qi followed beside Lu Chengfeng, examining Little Meng City while they walked to the Mayor's Mansion.

The road to the city was properly built with the limestone from the mountain. There was a three foot wide ditch alongside the road, where clear water flowed. It seems the sanitation in the city is pretty well-taken

care. Beside the road were brick and mortar restaurants, shops, hotels, and residences with a uniform green roof. None of them exceeded three stories height.

On this wide road, push carts, fully packed with beast skins, herbs, and minerals, come and go. Behind these push carts are some strong and tall men, wearing flexible armor and carrying sharp blades. From their fierce bearings, one can easily tell they were good fighters that had gone through life and death.

The restaurants, shops, and hotels were mostly patronized by rude men, who would draw their blades just because some stranger looked at them the wrong way. Sometimes, women, who wore in sexy and seductive clothes, would appear at these places, flirting and joking with these rude men.

Out of Wu Qi's expectations, Little Meng City was actually quite prosperous. However, this prosperity was accompanied by a rude and brutal aura. This really makes one feel odd, however, after taking a few more breaths, Wu Qi decided he really liked the feel of this city.

When carriages and pedestrians on the road saw Wu Qi's group coming, they all moved to the side of the road and made way for them. In a wild place like Little Meng City, Yi Yan represented the law, he represented the most prominent power within this area, and no one dared to step on the dignity of the Mayor.

From time to time, city guards, who were wearing in black cloth and armor, would pass by, when they saw the group, they immediately move to the roadside and bow to them. Wu Qi took a glimpse at them and found out they were weaker than the soldier from the third battalion of

Heavenly Group, who were now stationed in Meng village. No matter their cultivation level or their spirit, they like phonies in comparison.

After following the main road into the city for around three miles, a magnificent and grand mansion came in sight.

The mansion was at least a mile in circumference and had a thick wall built at its perimeter. The wall was much better than the city walls of Little Meng Village, it was built from hard rock, five feet tall, three feet thick, and at least ten times stronger than the Little Meng City.

Vigorous and energetic guards with good quality armor were patrolling on top of the wall, making sure no intruders pass. Comparing to the soldiers who were guarding at the City Gate of Little Meng City, the soldiers here were the elite, and those at City Gate were just rubbish.

With a proud smile on his face, Yi Yan pointed at the mansion and said, “General Lu, this is the Mayor Mansion, it is the place where we live and work.”

Lu Chengfeng stared at this small-sized castle, feeling amazing, and asked, “Oh? The office for Mayor, General, Director of Records, Director of Internal Affairs, and Director of Security are all here?”

Yi Yan patted his stomach with his hand, said with full emotion, “The Little Meng City is located in a desolated area, we are surrounded by dangers, the real dangers. Those barbarians kept attacking us and the lousy city wall can never hold them back, so they could come into the city and wreak havoc. For the safety of all government officers, I had spent two years to build this Mayor Mansion!”

All three directors, who were from Yi family, hurriedly praised Yi Yan for his efforts, thanking him for spending so much money to build this mansion and protect their lives. They even said Yi Yan had built something that will be beneficial for a thousand years, and that their descendants would be able to stay safe because of Yi Yan!

Wu Qi snuffled loudly, with a deep voice he asked, “Since you had the money to build a Mayor’s Mansion, why didn’t you spend the money to fix the city wall? Isn’t that a much easier way to block those barbarians from entering the city?”

Three directors were shocked by what Wu Qi said. On the other side, Yi Yan trembled, his thick fat white body shaking, and shouted with a high pitch voice, “No money, we are really poor, Little Meng City is in a desolate place. How much tax can we collect each year? The Mayor’s office had no money on the book. We had spent the tax collection for next ten years to build this wall, we had no more money to fix the city wall now!”

No money? Wu Qi twisted his lip. He just gazed at those gemstones and jewels Yi Yan wore which worth more than few hundred thousand.

Lu Chengfeng let out a dried laugh but never say anything else. He looked at the soldiers who were patrolling on the wall, then he turned around and look over his shoulder at the city guards who were escorting him here, he rolled his eyes after noticing the difference. The guards of the Mayor’s Mansion were so much better than the city guards.

After some complicated ceremonies that Wu Qi didn’t understand, he

followed Lu Chengfeng and entered into Mayor's Mansion. All seven coaches and servants who followed Lu Chengfeng here were arranged to stay in the General's residency within the Mayor's Mansion. The General residency is a luxurious courtyard with few buildings in it, and there were dozens of servants had been prearranged in it.

This is the first time Wu Qi saw who were in those coaches of Lu Chengfeng. Besides from Laohei and Xiaohei, there's eight maids and eight serving lady, and two wet nurses who are on lactation.

Also, this is the first time Wu Qi learned from Lu Chengfeng, these two wet nurses were responsible for producing human medicine.

Human medicine! Wu Qi learned a new thing for this world.

Roughly arranged some tasks for maids and serving ladies, Yi Yan had sent someone to invite Lu Chengfeng to attend a welcoming dinner.

The welcome dinner was held in the inner hall with the Mayor Mansion, including Wu Qi, nearly two hundred of Little Meng City officers attended the dinner. As Lu Chengfeng's right-hand man, of course Wu Qi was qualified to attend the dinner. Welcome by Yi Yan himself, Wu Qi sat at a low table right behind Lu Chengfeng.

Right in the center is a low, long table that Yi Yan sat uncomfortably behind. Beside him were all three Directors and the General. Besides Lu Chengfeng who only had Wu Qi sitting alone behind him, the rest of the Directors had at least three to five men behind them. Some even had dozens of men following behind them.

The inner hall was divided into left and right sides, with each side having three long tables. Besides from the five highest position officers, the rest of the officers were sitting at these six long tables.

Wu Qi was examining the table in front of him. It was a 3 x 1.5 foot low table, made from some heavy timber and coated with dozen layers of shining paint. Gold and silver threads were embroidered on the surface of the table in some geometrical pattern. It looked luxurious and dignified.

The inner hall had sandalwood tile flooring, and everyone was sitting on a thick, warm, and cozy cashmere carpet. There were two rows of huge pillars in the hall, which were made from Golden Nanmu Wood [1]. Dragons and phoenixes were carved on top of the pillar, giving the hall a luxurious and magnificent atmosphere.

The ceiling of the inner hall was made from sandalwood too. Dozens of lanterns hung from it, pouring bright light onto every inch of the hall. There's even tree-shaped chandeliers with candles burning on them at four corners of the hall. The candles were mixed with some spices which produced a fragrance scent in the air.

Wu Qi had taken a shower back at the General's residency. He had covered his bald head[A] with a scarf, changed into a comfortable silk robe, and put on some soft cloth boots. When he smelled the fragrance in the air, he felt like falling asleep.

Yi Yan was definitely living a luxurious life, but Wu Qi appreciates this kind of luxuriousness. At least, he can live comfortably, in comparison to Meng Village. Wu Qi is not a monk. If he has the choice of living comfortably, why should he choose to suffer?

Stretching his back, Wu Qi kept throwing examining look at all the other officers within the hall.

All the other officers had their attention on Lu Chengfeng, trying their best to show the brightest smiles they could. As for Wu Qi, besides from few young maids who gazed at him secretly, no one else really notices him.

Suddenly, Yi Yan clapped his hand and with a loud voice, he said, “So had all the men here? Serve the wine, let’s welcome our General Lu. The journey from Liyang to Little Meng City surely is tough, I bet General Lu must have a hard time coming here!”

Few hundred maids came out from the back of the hall, like butterflies, placing bronze wine bottles in front of all those sitting at the tables.

Everyone raised their glasses and toasted Lu Chengfeng, “It must have been a tough journey. General Lu, let’s drink!”

Lu Chengfeng raised his glass, stood up and smiled back to everyone and, after a few rounds of boring speeches, everyone started to drink the wine in their glasses

Yi Yan clapped his hand again, then the maids started to serve all kind of delicacies. Each and every single plate and bowl was filled with a variety of food. The portions were not big, but there were many different things to try. The fragrance of these delicacies made anyone who smelled them feel hungry.

It had been a few days since Wu Qi had eaten a proper meal, so when he saw the delicacies in front of him, he couldn't wait and grabbed a yellowish, springy deer tendon with a chopstick and put it into his mouth. The deer tendon was so fragrant and juicy that Wu Qi couldn't help but praise it in his mind.

When he was in the middle of enjoying the food, suddenly, a muffled sound resounded within the hall, and a bronze wine bottle was smashed onto the floor.

A husky fellow behind the Director of Record stood up, pointed at Wu Qi with his finger, and shouted, "Where did this savage come from? Don't you know what manners are? The master hasn't said anything, but you have already started to eat?"

Everyone in the room stared at Wu Qi, then, under the shines from the lantern, they saw some oil dripping from his lips.

After a moment of complete silence, laughter burst out with the hall.

Notes:

[1] Golden Nanmu Wood - a type of wood that was frequently used for building boats, architectural woodworking, and wood art in China. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nanmu]

[A] - I was just talking with the TL, and he told me he envisions Wu Qi looking like One Punch Man's Saitama (aka One Punch Man) XD

Chapter 17 – Magical Item

The hall was filled with laughter. They were all laughing at Wu Qi's recklessness and his insolent manner.

While munching on the deer tendon, Wu Qi stared at the man with an indifferent eye. Then, when he saw the happy look in eyes of Yi Xing, the Director of Records, he suddenly realized that even if he had shown good manners, this guy would have still stood up and provoked him. What he had just done was simply too good of an opportunity for them to pass up.

Gazing at that guy out of the corner of his eye, Wu Qi picked up a chunk of bear's paw and put into his mouth, while glaring at the Director of Records.

Munching on the bear's paw, Wu Qi sneered and said, "I was eating my food. Why the fuck do you care?"

Laughter burst out again, the rude word of Wu Qi had spoken gave them another reason to laugh at him. The man who started it raised his head up pleasantly, while laughing out loud, he said, "What a rude savage man. Are you really supposed to be here?"

Suddenly, Lu Chengfeng let out a cough.

The cough shuts everyone's mouth. Even Yi Yan, who was laughing till all his fat was trembling, shut his mouth.

Lu Chengfeng stood up slowly and glanced at everyone with an indifferent expression, then, with a deep and strong voice, he said, “Wu Qi is my savior. Without him, I, Chengfeng, would have been killed by some assassins outside the city. In light of this, I made him my right-hand man. It is I, Chengfeng, who brought him here. Do any of you object to me bringing him here?”

All of the officers lowered their heads,. Except for Yi Yan and his three siblings, no one dared to look into Lu Chengfeng in the eyes.

Lu Chengfeng smiled, then he took up his chopstick, grabbed a few slices of meat and put into his mouth, munching on them with large noisy bites.

“I have gone through a long journey to get here. I felt hungry, so when I saw these delicacies and fine wine, I ate few bites of them recklessly. Does anybody wish to speak up and stop me?”

The hall went completely silent. No one dared to make any noise. Some of the more cowardly officers began to tremble, their legs touching the low table in front of them and making some noise. With just a few words, Lu Chengfeng had shown his imposing manner.

Yi Yan shook his big fat head, looking to his left and right, then he suddenly burst out with a laugh, “Hey, it is just a misunderstanding. General Lu is a man with a straightforward nature, hahaha. Everyone, let’s ignore those troublesome customs. Ah, really, it was all misunderstanding! Let’s eat! Everyone, drink till you drop, if you’re not drunk tonight, you’re not giving me any face!”

Lu Chengfeng smiled, then he raised his head and walk back to his seat. He turned around, holding the wine glass in his hand and gave Wu Qi a toast.

Wu Qi clinked his glass with Lu Chengfeng, while continuing to feast and drink, and said with a smile, “Thank you, young master! That was very kind of you!”

After raising up his glass and drinking to the toast, Wu Qi jumped up and flipped forward, throwing the wine glass at the man who had provoked him just now. It all happened so sudden, Wu Qi was moving faster than the wind, and the man was standing there not knowing what happen, the wine glass then forcefully smashed onto his face, breaking his pointy nose.

‘Crack’. The man screamed out in extreme pain. Two streams of blood shoot out from his nose.

Wu Qi extended his hand out, then repeatedly curled his fingers toward the palm[A], with a sneer he said, “Who didn’t tie his belt and let you escape? I was here eating and drinking, but you provoked me so suddenly. What was your purpose? Was your master trying to show his power over my master?”

The smile on Yi Yan’s face suddenly froze, but soon, an even brighter smile jumped on his face.

The Director of Records, Yi Xing, gazed at Wu Qi, with a cold shoulder he said, “Outrageous! Why would I want to provoke General Lu? And, how dare I to provoke General Lu? My servant is a simple and honest man. He

always follows the customs and rules, therefore, he became angry when he saw what you did."

With the wine glass in his hand, Lu Chengfeng sneered, "So, you mean that it was Chengfeng's servant the didn't respect the custom. So I, Chengfeng, am the one who messed up?"

Yi Xing's changed his expression and didn't say another word. It was pretty obvious he had admitted to what Lu Chengfeng just said.

Lu Chengfeng's face immediately darkened. He looked at Yi Xing, sneered, and said, "Wu Qi, since that's what they want, let's have a good fight with this gentleman, remember, don't ruin the reputation of Liyang's Lu Family!"

Yi Yan drank some wine and didn't stop this from happening.

Yi Xing stuck out his chest and shouted, "Adda, since General Lu has said that, you'll fight with this warrior, Wu Qi. Remember, don't disgrace the reputation of Ruyang's Yi family!"

Complete silence reigned in the hall. No one dared to say a word. It had suddenly become a fight between two prominent families. This fight of reputation between the Lu and Yi families, how did it happened? All the officers sat quietly without looking away. They were just some low ranked officers in a remote city, if they got themselves involved in a fight between two prominent families, it would cost them the lives of their entire family!

But, these officers had a bit of excitement in their minds. They had heard a lot about the arguments between young masters from prominent families. Usually they would end with a fight between their servants, but today was the first time they had personally witnessed this, and it excited them!

Also, Lu Chengfeng was from Lu Family in Liyang. This is the most powerful clan in the Lu Kingdom besides the royal family. If the only servant of Lu Chengfeng was killed here, what would the reaction of the Lu family be? If the Lu family had their revenge on Yi Yan and his siblings, perhaps Little Meng City would experience some changes and everyone here would have an opportunity to move up in rank!

With a nasty grin, Yi Xing's servant, Adda walked with long strides to the middle of the hall, then he raised up his huge fists and beckoned at Wu Qi. With a sarcastic look in his eyes, Wu Qi gazed at Adda's body, which was taller than him, then he shook his head in disdain.

Anyone could tell that Wu Qi was not taking Adda seriously. Adda's face became dark. He angrily asked, "What weapon are you using?"

Raising his hands up into the air, Wu Qi sneered and said, "Do you really think I need a weapon to defeat you?"

Wu Qi had slim hands and blue veins can be clearly seen underneath his thin, bronzed skin. His hands didn't look powerful enough. When a few of the warriors in the room looked at Wu Qi's hands, they shook their head at the same time.

Adda stared at Wu Qi's hand and became startled for a moment, then a

ferocious grin lit his face and, without saying anything, he struck at Wu Qi with a punch. Adda's beefy muscles seemed to spasm, and his fist burst through the air, producing a deep noise, then, everyone saw the fist flash forward and penetrate Wu Qi's head.

The hall exploded with a scream followed by a horrible roar.

A huge amount of blood splashed on the ground. Wu Qi, who everyone thought had had his head smashed by Adda, was standing firmly behind where Adda was previously standing. Adda, who had looked down on Wu Qi, was laying down on the ground with blood flowing from his mouth.

There were only a few men there who actually saw what happened.

When Adda struck forward with his fist, Wu Qi had moved. He had leaped up to Adda's back with lightning fast speed, like a slippery mud fish. Then, he attacked with both palms moving like a windmill, turning and hitting continuously onto Adda's back. In a split-second, he had hit Adda's back thirty-six times.

By combining the Hand of Webs and the Palm of Picking Stars, Wu Qi stole a thread of qi essence from Adda and made it into his own. After this, he transformed his innate water energy into an invisible and erosional airwave and then sent it into Adda's body and shattered all of his internal organs.

All of Adda's internal organs were shattered. There are even broken pieces of some unknown organs contain within the blood on the ground. After a horrible scream, Adda died on the spot. The hall exploded with screams, while Yi Xing's expression turned extremely awful. He slammed

on the table in front of him with both hands, sending plates and wines all over the floor.

Lu Chengfeng let out a pleasant laugh and then waved at Wu Qi and said, “Wu Qi, what a clean and quick win! Here. This is your reward!”

Lu Chengfeng grabbed something out from his waist. It was a red and yellow colored piece of ancient jade. Wu Qi’s eyes narrowed, he grabbed over the jade and thanked Lu Chengfeng. When he had the jade in his hands, Wu Qi immediately found it was a Fire and Earth double element jadestone, traditionally used for expelling coldness. This was a pretty rare item.

There was also a Fire energy mixed with the Earth energy contained within this jade, but it had been entangled deeply with the jade itself. Wu Qi had only cultivated with the ‘Source of Water Chapter’, so he had yet to have any way of extracting this energy and making it his own.

Shoving the jade into his belt, Wu Qi grabbed a wine glass from a random officer’s table and drank the wine, then he glared at Yi Xing and said, “Director of Records, any more lessons you want to teach? I, the ignorant savage, am here waiting patiently for your honorable teaching!”

Lu Chengfeng let out a bright smile and proposed a toast to Wu Qi, not saying anything else. He had no intention of stopping Wu Qi’s provocation. He wanted to use Wu Qi to establish his power and let the people in Little Meng City know that he, Lu Chengfeng, is not an easy target.

While playing with the wine glass in his hand, in the corner of his eye,

Lu Chengfeng glanced at Yi Yan, who was sitting in the chairman's position.

Yi Yan was holding and playing with a jade plate, smiling and not saying anything. His pure white skin reflected the light from the lanterns, which shined into the eyes of those who looked at him.

Yi Xing was releasing his anger on the table in front of him while breathing rapidly, he glared ferociously at Lu Chengfeng who was acting like a gentleman and, with a sneer, he said, "Ae-er, your elder brother was killed by him, now it is your turn to get some teaching from mister Wu Qi!"

A skinny man, with a height of nearly ten feet,stood up slowly and walked to stand the front of Wu Qi. The skinny man's facial features resembled Addas, but he was extremely skinny, as if all of his blood was sucked up by some alien.

When Wu Qi stared at him, he immediately felt a great evil about this man that made him felt uncomfortable. He sped up the circulation of innate water energy in his arms, then a chilling water vapor flowed to every single part of his body, forming a layer of tough defense underneath his skin.

The skinny Ae-er stared at Wu Qi calmly, then with a freezing voice he said this.

"I am Ae-er. You just killed my brother. Though my capability is weaker than yours, you must die!"

Wu Qi looked at Ae-Er, then he casually pushed his palm forward. Wu Qi attacked with his Hand of Webs, his innate water energy had formed into an invisible, fast spinning whirlpool in his palm, the air in front of his palm became blurry, and the surrounding air started to spin rapidly, producing the indistinct sound of air flow.

Many officers in the hall were startled and raised their heads, looking at Wu Qi's attack.

Lu Chengfeng's eyes narrowed and a look of surprised appeared within them.

"Marvelous! I didn't expect a servant I just recruited to have such an amazing skill! He can unleash his energy and cause surrounding natural forces to behave abnormally. This proves he has cultivated to the level of peak Houtian Warrior, almost touching the Xiantian Saint stage. Hoho. If he can achieve the level of Xiantian Saint, then he would be of great help to me!"

Lu Chengfeng was thinking fast, and started to plan on how he could get Wu Qi to become genuinely loyal to him.

Wu Qi kept staring at Ae-er, the force on his palm becoming stronger and stronger, and the air whirlpool in front of him spining faster and faster. Soon, the color of the air began to change into a light blue, carrying with it a freezing cold energy, locking onto Ae-er from afar.

Suddenly, Wu Qi pushed his palm forward forcefully and the air whirlpool disintegrated, turning into tens of light blue ropes made entirely from wind, flying toward Ae-Er at an extremely fast speed. If Ae-

Er was entangled by these wind ropes, unless he had a higher cultivation level than Wu Qi, he wouldn't be able to escape anymore.

The Hand of Webs is the most powerful skill in the Darkhand Sect, although it was only a foundational skill in the Scroll of Stealing, it was still a very rare and powerful skill in the mortal world.

Looking at the wind ropes that were speeding toward him, a fear emerged on Ae-er's face. He had now lost the courage to fight Wu Qi face to face, then he swung his sleeve and a three inch long white dagger appeared in his hand.

Notes:

[A] - He's doing this:

https://media2.giphy.com/media/Af6dsiJBh21qg/200_s.gif



Chapter 18 – The Burglary

Ae-er stabbed his other hand with the dagger, then the dagger started to suck out his blood and turned into a bright shining bloody red color. Ae-er's skinny body trembled violently, and he became even skinnier after his blood was sucked, looking like a skeleton wrapped in skin.

The dagger emitted a several foot long red light and was thrust toward Wu Qi's chest, shattering all the ropes of wind in its path. The speed of it was so fast that Wu Qi couldn't evade it at all. He merely twisted his body, then got his shoulder slashed by the red light. A fountain of blood shot out from his shoulder.

Letting out a pain filled cry, Wu Qi extended his hand and grabbing at the red light. Layers of blue energy covered over the dagger. Wu Qi dashed forward and positioned himself in front of Ae-er, then he kicked out his right leg and hit Ae-er right in the crotch.

Bam Ae-er was kicked a few feet away, then he spit out a stream of blood and died.

Wu Qi clenched his palm forcefully on the dagger, which was flying past, then he screamed and fell to the ground with his face upwards.

Before anyone could see what happened, Wu Qi's arm muscles began to move, like a flow of water, pushing and moving this mystical dagger into a secret pocket underneath his shirt.

Lu Chengfeng stood up slowly, gazed at Yi Xing, who was smiling, and,

with a cold voice, said, “Fine! So you even have a right-hand man who knows how to use a magical item. Everyone, Lu has learned a lesson today!”

With a sneer, Lu Chengfeng walked over to Wu Qi, who has ‘unconscious’, picked him up, and marched out of the hall.

The plump and pale Yi Yan raised up his wine glass and slowly drank up the wine in it. Staring at Lu Chengfeng’s back, Yi Yan claped his hands and, with a joyful voice, said, “General Lu has left, but we can’t waste these delicacies and fine wines. Everyone, let’s feast!”

Light music came from the back of the hall abd dozens of female dancers, who were wearing the skimpiest of clothes, came out, dancing. The waving ribbons and the lotus fans in their hands filled the hall with a joyful and seductive atmosphere.

All the officers of Little Meng City cheered and clapped, raising their wine glasses and proposed their toasts to Yi Yang and his siblings.

Hearing the cheering and music came from his back, the elegant face of Lu Chengfeng, was strained and grim. He carried Wu Qi and walked passed different courtyards, although there were guards, maids and serving ladies everywhere he passed, but, it was like there’s only he and Wu Qi left in the world, a lonely and quiet atmosphere was covering them.

After walking past three courtyards, when they were almost back to the General’s Residency, Wu Qi suddenly opened up his eyes, blinking at Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Chengfeng was startled, nearly dropping Wu Qi.

Wu Qi hissed hurriedly to stop Lu Chengfeng, then with a soft voice, he said, “Wait, pretend I am still unconscious. Young master, please bring me back and let everybody know that I was seriously wounded by that lower tier magical weapon. It should take me a few days to recover and walk again.”

Without having many changes in his expression, Lu Chengfeng continues walking while carrying Wu Qi and, at the same time, asks, “What is this all about?”

Wu Qi let out a dry laugh, took a glimpse at the position of his secret pocket, and, in a soft voice, said, “A lower tier magical weapon, I’m sure it is worth quite a lot?”

Lu Chengfeng was startled again, then burst out laughing, “Indeed. I think it was Yi Xing who gave this lower tier magical weapon to Ae-er. If he really is so shameless and asks us to return it to him, that would be troublesome.”

Wu Qi laughed, then he closed his eyes and pretended he was still fainted. He murmured, “Young master, why is your identity, being that of the eldest son of Lu family, useless here. I thought the Yi family and the Lu family had been friends for many generations? Why are they provoking you, as if they were not worried about offending the Lu family?

Lu Chengfeng kept quiet and then, after some time, when they were reaching the room arranged for Wu Qi, said, “You are right, the Lu family

and the Yi family were friends for many generations, they are even related to each other by marriage. But none of this had anything to do with me."

Shouting out loud and asked for Laohei and Xiaohei to find some medicines and water for Wu Qi, Lu Chengfeng spoke softly, "Why would the eldest son of the Lu family come here, to a remote, tiny little city to become a General? The reason for this... I'll let you know one day! If you regret your decision, just leave Lu here, go and find your fortune elsewhere."

With his eyes closed, Wu Qi's lips moved slightly, said with extremely soft voice, "Helping one when they have nothing means much. Helping one when they have everything means little... I bet you will be wealthy one day!"

Lu Chengfeng dumbfounded, then he breathed out a long sigh.

Laohei and Xiaohei had quickly come in with few maids that Lu Chengfeng had brought here. These maids were slaves that Lu Chengfeng bought and raised since they were young.As opposed to those guards, who arranged by Lu family for Lu Chengfeng, these maids were the only people he could trust here.

After cleaning Wu Qi's wound on his shoulder and applying a thick, secret formulated medicinal paste, Lu Chengfeng left Wu Qi's room and let him rest. He also arranged for two maids to stay with Wu Qi so they can take care of him.

In the eyes of the maids and serving ladies arranged by Yi Yan, Wu Qi

was badly wounded and can't get up from bed anytime soon. Therefore, their focus was now on Lu Chengfeng alone.

After a few restless hours, midnight arrived.

The suite Wu Qi was staying in had two bedrooms, including a small living-room and a study. Right now, Wu Qi was staying in the inner bedroom, while he two maids of Lu Chengfeng were staying in another bedroom. These two maids can't stay up late at night, although Lu Chengfeng ordered them to take good care of Wu Qi, but both of them had fallen asleep on a soft bed now.

Wu Qi, who was 'unconscious', stood up nimbly and walked out of his bedroom quietly. He softly pressed a few acupuncture points of the two maids. This would make sure they slept until the morning.

Back to his own bedroom, Wu Qi opened a window that lead to a garden full of exotic flowers and rare plants. There was a door at the corner of the garden that lead to a training field outside the General's Residency, where many subordinates of the General were staying nearby.

Throwing an examining look around, Wu Qi circulated some of his innate water energy into his eyes and checked the surrounding area, making sure there was no one hiding nearby.

With a peace of mind, Wu Qi stepped out of the window and grabbed a cloth and covered his face. At the same time, he covered his body with a thin layer of innate water energy, then, with a flip of his body, faded water vapor appeared and hovering around him, making him became blurry and very difficult to see, even if you were standing three feet away.

The Scroll of Stealing contained all sorts of things. For example, the 'Innate Water Energy Shift' in the 'Source of Water Chapter', is a unique skill. Although Qu Qi had only the cultivation level of peak Houtian, and he can't travel more than hundred thousand miles, like what was stated in the Source of Water Chapter, but gathering some water vapor and surrounding his body with it was easy enough for him to do.

Leaping forward nimbly, with the cover of the water vapor, Wu Qi soon went across many rooftops and, eventually, came to Yi Yan's mansion.

It was midnight. Besides from those guards who were on duty, everyone else had gone to sleep. The strongest guard on duty only had the cultivation level of thirty to forty years' stage, how could they find out Wu Qi's traces?

Not even mentioned all the skill provided by the Scroll of Stealing, with just the experience Wu Qi gained in the Darkhand Sect, he could be a great thief. Under the cover of water vapor, Wu Qi actually walked right in front of those guards several times, but none of them ever saw him.

As if he is was the king of this place, Wu Qi had crossed all the lines of defense easily and, eventually, he arrived at Yi Yan's bedroom.

Yi Yan's bedroom was huge and luxurious, decorated with all kinds of jewels and gemstones. Just the his bed alone had impressed Wu Qi. He simply can't describe how astonished he was.

The bed was a few feet in length and width and made entirely from pure gold, with a thick layer of silk and cotton on top of it. When Wu Qi

stared at that huge solid gold cube, he felt his hands become itchy, and wished he could just move the entire pure gold cube away.

After spending a few days with those villagers in Meng village, Wu Qi knew how precious gold was to this place. Ordinary people don't even know what gold looks like. A gold coin can be exchanged for a hundred silver coins, and a silver coin can be exchanged for three hundred to a thousand ordinary coins, and, head of a barbarian only worth one hundred ordinary coins.

The huge gold bed of Yi Yan was worth countless gold coins!

"This damn pig, how dare he to claim the tax collection was not enough to fix the city wall? I'll steal everything from him. Everything!"

Wu Qi kept staring at this bed made of pure gold, his mind, eyes and hand became so excited. But too bad, this bad weight a ton, how could Wu Qi move it away? There is a kind of magical storage ring and storage bag recorded within the Scroll of Stealing. It was said that it could store a huge amount of items within it. It is also said that the highest level of storage rings can even store a planet within them.

But Wu Qi had just entered into the world of cultivation, so he didn't even know how what the world looked like. How would he know where to find this kind of treasure?

The Scroll of Stealing did mention a method to make storage rings and storage bags, but, first, the raw materials were very difficult to obtain, and second, Wu Qi didn't have a sufficient cultivation level to make them. Without a high level of energy and skills, there was no way he could make

this kind of storage treasure.

Breathing out a long sigh, Wu Qi slowly walked closer to the bed and then pointed and pressed softly on Yi Yan's body, making him fall into a deep sleep.

Beside the huge and chubby body of Yi Yan, there were four petite and beautiful serving ladies. They were all naked and looked tired. Obviously they had gone through a tiring battle with Yi Yan before they fell asleep. Wu Qi looked at the fat body of Yi Yan, then he turned around and looked at those serving ladies, whose combined waists were still smaller than Yi Yan's waist. He wondered how these serving ladies could survive Yi Yan's weight. [TL note: ahem... women on top.]

Pointing his fingers at these four petite serving ladies, Wu Qi made them fall into a deep sleep.

After some struggles in his mind, Wu Qi pushed away the blanket that covered them, then he caught a glimpse of Yi Yan's crotch.

Quickly looking at the bodies of those four serving ladies, Wu Qi covered them back up with the blanket, rubbing his hand while letting out a weird laugh.

"Wow. These girls have nice bodies!"

Yi Yan's purple gold headwear. Took it. Yi Yan's ring. Took it. Yi Yan's belt. Took it. Those jewels and gemstones used to decorate the room, Took them. Inside a cupboard at a corner, were a large amount of golden bars.

Took them all away.

Having grown up in the Darkhand Sect, Wu Qi had the vision of an eagle. With just one look, he knew the exact values of all these jewels and gemstones. Wu Qi only spent around fifteen minutes, yet he had taken away all of the most valuable things in the room.

After stealing all the visible treasures in the room, Wu Qi started examining the other parts of the room. From the memories of Le Xiao Bai, in his soul, he soon found two hidden mechanisms. Moving away two deer shaped incense burners in front of the bed, Wu Qi stomped on a tile on the floor, then a wall at one corner of the room slid open, revealing a secret chamber.

Rubbing his hands excitedly, Wu Qi ran into the secret chamber.

Soon, a satisfying laugh burst out from the secret chamber, like a mouse who had just found a huge wheel of cheese[A]! All the top quality resources of the past two years produced in Little Meng City were stored within this secret chamber by Yi Yan. Gemstones, jades, all kind of precious treasures, all pilled up in fifteen big crates inside the secret chamber.

Wu Qi kept running back and forth between Yi Yan's bedroom and the woods outside of the city. With the help of his Innate Water Energy Shift, he can run swiftly and it only took him fifteen minutes for each trip. After nearly an hour and a half, Wu Qi finally emptied all of Yi Yan's belongings.

After digging out a deep hole within the woods and burying all these treasures, Wu Qi went back to General Residency while whistling.

He was thinking about a very important thing: Where can he find a magical storage item?

After some satisfying thoughts, Wu Qi fell into a sleep filled with sweet dreams.

Early the next morning, the huge Mayor's Mansion was almost flipped over by Yi Yan's wild and loud roars.

"My money, my money, all my money! Which bastard had stolen all my money!!!!!!"

Notes:

[A] - So, apparently, mice like rice in China. This formerly said 'rice jar' as opposed to 'wheel of cheese'.

Chapter 19 – Establishing Authority

Fatty Yi Yan was crying like someone important to him had just died, turning Mayor Mansion into turmoil. All the guards who were on duty last night were now lined up in front of the main hall of the Mayor's Mansion with their pants taken off, receiving their caning punishment. Under the crazy roar of Yi Yan, these guards were screaming in pain, their pale white asses ransformed into some colorful abstract drawing.

For every few roars, the fatty Yi Yan would howl like the end of the world was here, his voice was like the night owl who was spitting blood. Even Wu Qi started to felt sorry for him.

"Awww, my.. my money… my money!"

"Awww aww, all the hard squeezed money for past three years, my money!"

"Awww, I've risked my life to stay here in Little Meng City, working day and night to squeeze out money from people here. My money!"

"Aww, without money, how am I going to feed all my hundred-thirty over women! I had so many women, so many right-hand men, so many guards! How am I going to feed them, how! My money, my… my money!"

"Aww, without money, what am I going to use to bribe others, how can I climb the social ladder, and how can I leave this damn place!"

A huge meatball, with only a tiny little piece of cloth covering at his crotch, was sitting at the entrance to the main hall of the Mayor's Mansion. The meatball was crying and wailing like nobody's business, screaming like there's no tomorrow, while his 'muscles' were wobbling like a tsunami, hitting each other and kept making crystal clear slapping sounds. A 'truly magnificent' view.

Yi Xing and the other two siblings of Yi Yan were standing aside and looking at him, trying to figure out how to help. Yi Yan's incredible losses had made their blood creep, and they sighed and groaned. This was extremely mean, except for the bed made entirely from a huge gold cube, all of Yi Yan's belongings were gone, even all silk clothes were stolen.

Three of them looked at each other, decided at the same time they would double the guards on duty tonight.

Wu Qi, who was 'seriously wounded', followed behind Lu Chengfeng, and came and shed his crocodile tears over Yi Yan's great losses.

Yi Yan was at the weakest moment in his life, he didn't care who it was that came and showed their condolences, he simply hugged Lu Chengfeng and cried his lungs out, smearing his tears and mucus all over Lu Chengfeng's clothes.

"General Lu, my money!!! You're the General for Little Meng City, you have to help me catch this bloody bastard who stole everything from me! Wuwu, all the hard earned money for past three years, I didn't even let a single coin slipped from my hand, and these were all I got, I was going to use the money to bribe myself a higher post! Wuwu, you think it is easy to a son from a wealthy family to earn money and get a good position in

government? You really think that simple?"

"The bloody bastards... you must help me catch these thieves, General Lu, kill every single one of them. Rip everything from them!"

With a bitter smile, Lu Chengfeng agreed to Yi Yan's requests and finally was able to struggle and pulled himself out of the fatty's hug, then he pulled his sleeves and turned around and left, breathing rapidly.

Wu Qi was running behind Lu Chengfeng and he heard Lu Chengfeng curse under his breath, "Bullshit, bullshit! What does catching a thief have to do with me? This is the responsibility of the Director of Security, what does this have to do with me?"

After running across few courtyards,Lu Chengfeng suddenly stopped and turned to Wu Qi, he then asked, "Don't tell me you're the one who did that?"

Wu Qi stared back Lu Chengfeng with a surprised expression, he pointed at his shoulder, which was bundled like a ball, and asked, "Do you think, with this arm, that I could achieve such a task?"

Lu Chengfeng threw an examining look at Wu Qi, then he shook his head hesitantly.

"Yes, you're wounded. But, I still think it was you who did this... Hmm, whatever, not me who got stolen from!"

Lu Chengfeng flung his sleeves out, then strolled back to his own

General Residency. At the General Residency, he asked Laohei and Xiaohei to help him change from his wet and mucus-filled robe. Today he needed to report to the General's Office and officially take over the position of General. According to the plan, the Mayor himself needed to accompany Lu Chengfeng personally on the first day of his work, but, looking at the state Yi Yan was in, the plan would need to be changed.

Wu Qi, too, strolled into Lu Chengfeng's bedroom, he lips twisted and he murmured, "Don't tell me this guy's zodiac was a dog?"

Fifteen minutes later, Lu Chengfeng had changed into a black-colored uniform, an iron token and a long sword hanging at his side, with a foot-tall cap on his head. Xiaohei, with a ferocious face, wore a set of heavy fish-scaled armor and was carrying a ten-foot long iron halberd. He followed closely behind Lu Chengfeng.

With both of his hands on his back, Lu Chengfeng stood at the front door of General Residency and stared into the grey sky, and self-mockingly said, "In the 2000 years' history of the Great Yan Dynasty and 300 years since the Lu Kingdom was established, I afraid I'm the shabbiest General to ever exist. With just a bodyguard and a right-hand ma... Look out world, here I come!"

Wu Qi recalled those two hundred guards who were either killed or chased back to their family, he shook his head.

With a lonely expression, Lu Chengfeng sighed and shrugged. But, soon he breathed deeply again, and, as if a dried weed was showered in spring water, he strengthened his spirit.

Punching his fist into the air, Lu Chengfeng let out a loud laugh and said, “But, I still have a right-hand man and a bodyguard, not bad, I am not at the end of the road yet! Two of you, let me tell you this, today, I’ll have my journey begin as this little General of Little Meng City, one day, I, Lu Chengfeng, will have my own kingdom!”

With a gaze full of respect, Xiaohei stared at Lu Chengfeng, but Wu Qi was yawning and scratching his right shoulder, which he felt pretty itchy.

After roaring towards the sky, Lu Chengfeng brought these two men past a foot-thick wall, crossed a hundred meters long pathway, and arrived at a big courtyard. The courtyard was several hundred feet wide, and was surrounded by a few offices. This was the working place of the General, the Director of Records, the Director of Internal Affairs, and the Director of Security, along with a few others important officers.

To the south of this square, a ten-foot-wide door leads to a street outside of the Mayor’s Mansion. Some businessmen and civilians were walking through it and went to different offices for their business. The place where the most people were gathered was the court of Internal Affairs office.

Wu Qi walked closer to it and glimpsed at what happened, it looks like the court was hearing a case of a mother-in-law and daughter-in-law that didn’t get along with each other, the old and young women were cursing each other in the court. There were more than three hundred civilians who were watching the fight excitedly.

However, due to the fact that the Mayor was in bad straights today, the Director of Internal Affairs, Yi De, was staying with Yi Yan right now, therefore, he was not here to judge on this civil matter. Since the boss

was not around, a few officers of Internal Affairs office were just sitting in the court happily provoking these two women and trying to stir the matter into something even more complicated, and making the court become a messy place.

Wu Qi shook his head. Looking at how these officers behaved, he already understood what Yi Yan and his siblings had turned Little Meng City into. A fish begins to stink at the head, like so, these officers of Little Meng City had become assholes, just like their boss.

The General was responsible for all the military activities of Little Meng City. He was also responsible for the gathering and distribution of military resources. Therefore, he was the most important among all the directors. That's also the reason why the office of General was located at the north side of this square, in front of the office were three tall flag poles, with four smaller offices located side by side.

Two smaller offices were located on the both sides of the main hall of the General's office. The Bursary Office was responsible for managing all the resources of General's office, and the War Room that managed the army and warfare. The Recruitment Office was responsible for new recruits, and the Barbarian Office handled all the matters directly related to the barbarians.

When Wu Qi came to the front of the main hall of the General office, he saw there were over thirty push carts lying in front of the Barbarian office. Each cart was full of barbarian's heads. A few uniformed officers were counting the heads while holding their noses with one of their hands.

Wu Qi recognized that these were the push carts of villagers from Meng village. However, the villagers were not beside these push carts,

but were gathered in front of the Bursary Office, shouting and complaining. Wu Qi also heard Zhang Hu's voice. It looks like he was quarreling with someone as well.

It was nightfall when they arrived at the city, and the office was closed at that hour. Therefore, the villagers can only come here early in the morning to redeem their reward for these barbarians' head. But why was Zhang Hu quarreling with someone in the Bursary Office?

After taking his leave from Lu Chengfeng, Wu Qi hurried into the Bursary Office, pushing away the villagers from Meng village and walking straight in.

The men from Meng Village were not some educated civilians. When Wu Qi started pushing them aside, he almost got himself beaten by them. Luckily, they saw it was Wu Qi who was pushing them, smiled, and let him through.

The Bursary Office was dark, and had a black table placed on top of a three foot high stone slab. A skinny adult man, with a pair of triangle-shaped eyes and a loose brow, was sitting behind the table, rolling his eyes. When Wu Qi came into the room, the man was scolding Zhang Wu with a loud voice.

"With just my eyes, which are as good as an eagle's, I can easily tell this Green Flame Skeleton is lousy stuff. You should feel glad that I am willing to pay you ten silver coins for it! But, you keep insisting that this is a low-tier magical item, and are trying to force me to buy this piece of crap with one hundred gold coins, are you trying to blackmail the City Guards?"

Hearing this ridiculous accusation, Zhang Hu became so mad that his face turned red, he kept quiet and just glared at this man with a fierce expression.

Inside the Bursary Office, besides the few barbarian hunters that followed Zhang Hu here, there was another group of men. It is pretty obvious this group of men didn't like Zhang Wu. The leader of the group was a strong man wearing black leather armor, and he was laughing and pointing at the Green Flame Skeleton in Zhang Hu's hand, sneering at him for bringing back a peice of 'useless crap' and trying to sell it as if it were some precious treasure. And laughing at the fact he even wasted a valuable 'Captivity Talisman' to control the skeleton.

These men were with the adult man in Bursary Office, and they tried their best to downplay the value of this magical item that Zhang Hu had obtained by killing the leader of the barbarians. They kept saying that the Green Flame Skeleton was a piece of crap, and that it was worth, at most, ten silver coins, and didn't deserve the price for a low-tier magical item, which was one hundred gold coins.

Wu Qi looked over his shoulder, and found that Lu Chengfeng had come through the villagers and into the office.

With a smile on his face, Wu Qi walked forward and pulled that man up from his seat, in front of everyone, he started to slap the man's face.

While slapping on the man's face, Wu Qi scolded him with a loud voice, "Eye's like an eagle's? I think you have a pair of dog eyes! How dare you try to con your master, Wu Qi's friend? Your master me had witnessed the

power of this skeleton personally, and now you tell me it is not a low-tier magical item?”

After dozens of forceful slaps, all the teeth in the man’s mouth had fallen out.

While the man was screaming and crying horribly, the man who was playing down Zhang Hu roared, then he drew out his sword and thrust it toward Wu Qi.

At the same time, Zhang Hu let out a loud roar and pulled out his blade, swinging it and clashing right into the man’s sword.

A deep clanging sound, and both men were forced back a few steps by the impact.

Chapter 20 – Tough Mission

Zhang Hu and the other guy looked at each other, then, without saying anything, they started to rush toward each other.

The dull and clanky sounds of weapons hitting each other resounded through the hall, two men immediately engaged in a fight. A small hole was cut on Zhang Hu's shirt by his opponent, but, he left a deep wound on his opponent's left shoulder, which made him bleed.

Zhang Hu let out a laugh and said, "Huo Biao, you're no match for me!"

The man, whose name was Huo Biao, spit, then he took a few steps back and sheathed his sword. After gazing at Zhang Hu, he sneered at Wu Qi with an insidious look, said, "Little man, you're in deep trouble! The man you just hit is the Bursary Officer of Little Meng City. If you flee now, I bet you won't make it fifty miles before you are caught and killed!"

The skinny man who was still in Wu Qi's handsd started to yell, "Ridiculous, this is ridiculous! How dare you assault a governmental officer? You peasant! Guards, guards! Take them down, take all of them down! I want a curfew now; I want a raid on the Vigorous Tiger Residence! This is a rebellion, they are killing government officers!"

A team of City Guards in black clothes and armor rushed over, pointing their spears at the villagers from Meng village, who were gathered in front of the Bursary Office. These villagers looked at each other and wondered what to do. Some of the more bad tempered villagers had already drawn their weapons and were getting ready to fight.

Wu Qi slapped on Bursary Officer's face again, this slap broke his cheekbone, making him stop screaming. Now he can only produce a sorrowful noise. Wu Wi kept slapping on his face while staring at Huo Biao and, with a sneer, said, "I'll bet that you will be the one who have to leave Little Meng City."

Huo Biao's expression changed as he stared back at Wu Qi, then looked at Bursary Officer again, then he took a few steps back again.

Zhang Hu burst out laughing and pointed his blade at Huo Biao, shouting, "Huo Biao, I'll join the bet as well. You have offended little brother Wu Qi, so, you're the one who should be fleeing from Little Meng City! Ha ha, Little Meng City will become a better place without you!"

The City Guards outside of Bursary Office approached, then the leader of these guards yelled, "Listen! Let go of Bursary Officer, drop your weapon, put your hands in the air, and come out right now! Failing to comply will result in death!"

Hearing what the leader said, the villagers from Meng Village immediately drew their weapons, getting ready to fight with these City Guards. What these humble villagers want was simple, Zhang Hu and Wu Qi were both their friends, when a friend was in trouble, they would jump up and help them. As for what the consequences of attacking City Guards would be, they never bothered to think about something that complicated.

Lu Chengfeng looked at these villagers in surprise and admiration, then he coughed loudly and raised the iron token from his waist. With a stern

voice, he shouted, “I’m the new General, Lu Chengfeng, keep your weapons and return to your posts!”

The City Guards immediately retracted their weapons when they saw the iron token. The leader of City Guards got down on one knee together with all the guards, paying their respects to Lu Chengfeng.

With a swollen and bleeding face, the Bursary Officer gave an inarticulate cry, “Bastards! Hurry up and save me! If something bad happens to me, my young master won’t spare any of you! This man is just a tiny little General, my young master is the Mayor, he is THE MAYOR!”

These City Guards trembled and stood up again, pointing their spears toward villagers once more.

Lu Chengfeng burst into anger, and snapped sternly, “How dare you! As the City Guards, disobeying the order from General is equivalent to staging an armed rebellion! You guys want to get your family's killed? Drop your weapons and stand aside!”

Some of guards trembled when hearing what Lu Chengfeng said, almost dropping their weapons. But, they still held their weapons firmly, pointing them at the villagers.

Lu Chengfeng’s face darkened, he turned around and stared at the bleeding Bursary Officer, sneered, and said, “So, the order of a Bursary Officer is higher than me, the General! City Guards of Little Meng City. Perfect, you guys are perfectly fit for your post!”

The leader of the City Guards felt embarrassed and looked at Lu Chengfeng, grumbling, “General, please don’t make things difficult for us!”

Before Lu Chengfeng says anything, Wu Qi let out a loud laugh. He dropped the Bursary Officer on ground, then, with all his strength, he stepped on his right shoulder. With a ‘crack’, the Bursary Officer struggled and screamed immediately, holding his right shoulder with his left hand, he twisted his body few times, like a mudfish, and passed out.

Wu Qi snapped, “According to the military law of Lu Kingdom, what is the punishment for disobeying an order?”

Lu Chengfeng grind his teeth and shouted, “The death sentence!”

Xiaohei let out a roar, like mad cow, and then thrust the long halberd in his hand toward the heart of the City Guard leader, who was stunned by Lu Chengfeng. The City Guard leader never expected that Lu Chengfeng would give out an order to kill him, but, it was too late for him to regret his actions, the halberd had penetrated his leather armor, and impaled his chest, sticking out three feet out from the other side.

Xiaohei grinned hideously and, with a massive force, he raised the leader high up and threw him away. Blood spilled as the corpse flew far away, landing right in front of the Internal Affairs Office.

Those bystanders in front of Internal Affairs office dispersed in horror and screamed, then, a few officers who were working in Internal Affairs office walked out, full of fear, checking what happened from afar, but not daring to say anything.

More City Guards had rushed to the scene, they were all terrified by the dead body of their colleague, few hundreds of them simply stood blankly in the middle of the Square, with mixed emotions they kept looking back and forth between Lu Chengfeng and the dead leader.

Wu Qi stood beside Lu Chengfeng, then with a stern voice, he said, “Take a closer look, this could be you! Those who disobeying General’s order, no mercy! All of you are the City Guards of Little Meng City, and that means you have to obey the order from General, or else, you’ll be considered as an outlaw!”

The City Guards became stirred, few middle-ranked officers loosen their grip on the weapon, lower down their head and kept quiet.

Lu Chengfeng continued with a harsh tone, “Belay this! Gather all the officers, lieutenant and above. I want to meet with them now! I will count to one hundred. Any that are absent will die!”

Xiaohei walked to the front of a drum located outside of the General Office, and started striking it with his fist. A resounding thump sound had soon spread across Little Meng City. With each strike on the drum, Xiaohei counted.

Soon, foot pattering came from outside the Square, those officers had started to gather. When they saw the dead body and the blood on the floor, their footsteps stalled and they had weird expressions on their face, then, a fear and respectful look appeared in their eyes when they looked at Lu Chengfeng.

Zhang Hu and the others saw things had left their control, he hurried and brought the villagers over to those thirty over pushcarts and left. He waved at Wu Qi before he left to show his gratitude, Wu Qi holds his fist back to Zhang Hu but didn't say anything to him.

After a hundred strikes on the drum by Xiaohei, the hall of the General's Office was packed with over one hundred and thirty officers. All the commanding officers for the eight thousand soldiers in Little Meng City were here, the highest ranking officer among them was of the deputy General rank, and, there were eighteen of them.

Wu Qi didn't understand anything about the military system of Lu Kingdom, but Lu Chengfeng was so mad that he was trembling.

According to the military system of Lu Kingdom, a battalion consists three thousand soldiers, and the highest rank officer in the battalion would be deputy General. There's not more than eight thousand soldiers in Little Meng City, therefore, the maximum deputy General would be three. But right now, there was a total of eighteen deputy General in front of them, forty over captains and the rest were all lieutenants. What were all these about? It simply means the military had too many redundant officers, and these guys were enjoying their free meals in the army.

Besides these redundant military officers, the Bursary Officers, War Room Officers, Recruitment Officers and Barbarian Officers were all from the Yi family. Just like the Bursary Officers who was beaten by Wu Qi, the other three officers were all Yi Yan's relatives.

With a dark face, Lu Chengfeng sat behind his table within the hall, kept knocking his hand on the table surface.

Wu Qi sat beside Lu Chengfeng, smiled and whispered, “Eight thousand City Guards, how much do they get payed a year? What are the military expenses every year? And all these deputy Generals, captains, lieutenants, they get even more to spend on meals, gambling, and even hookers! Does Little Meng City, really only have eight thousand soldiers?”

Lu Chengfeng’s body trembled.

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes and enjoyed the moment, he never would believe that damn fatty Yi Yan would use his own money to pay for these redundant officers. So, the answer was pretty obvious. These military officers were getting their pay and allowance from the government without doing anything, and they might even sell military equipment secretly. In short, all sorts of dark things were happening here.

Lu Chengfeng groaned, and slowly gazed at each of the officers standing in the hall, after some time, with a deep voice he said, “Tomorrow noon, I want to review all the soldiers in the city. If any soldier in your troop doesn’t fulfill the military requirement, strip your armor and get the hell out from here!”

All these military officers raised up their head and looked at Lu Chengfeng, some of the officers had a mocking smile suddenly. Many of them just left the General Office’s hall straight away, without saluting to Lu Chengfeng who was their General.

Lu Chengfeng was so exasperated by their response that he pressed his palm forcefully on the table, leaving a sunken palm-shaped hole on it silently, wood chips being blown away by a sudden breeze. He

murmured, “Absolutely lawless, ridiculous!”

Wu Qi breathed out a long sigh, and, with a smile, he shook his head, saying, “Young master, you better get prepared to replace all these men. The City Guards of Little Meng City are rotten to their core!”

All of a sudden, Wu Qi recalled the third battalion of the Heavenly Guards that were sent to Meng Village. That was an elite troop, and the leader was an intrepid man. Why is he different from all the other military officers he had seen just now.

After remain silence for some time, Wu Qi suggested, “That War Room Officer, Recruitment Officer, and Barbarian Officers, we should get rid of them as well, right?”

Lu Chengfeng grabbed the pen and paper on the table without saying anything, and started to draft out four official memos, firing all of his subordinates, including War Room Officers, Recruitment Officers, Bursary Officers, and Barbarian Officers. Pondering for some time, he drafted another four official memos, appointed Laohei as the new Bursary Officer, Xiaohei as Barbarian Officer, Wu Qi as War Room Officer, and, Zhang Hu as Recruitment Officer.

Wu Qi stared at the newly drafted appointment memos, then he kept shaking his head.

Laohei was an honest and loyal old servant that followed Lu Chengfeng, he would be the right person to manage military resources storage.

There was nothing much to do in the Barbarian Office, what they did was counting barbarian's head every day, and pay each with one hundred coins, this was an easy job and just right for Xiaohei who was a simple-minded dude.

As for Wu Qi himself, he felt in this world without modern weapons, he could even be an Admiral that lead the army of one kingdom, let alone be a War Room Officer in this Little Meng City. With the freaking high intelligence inherited from Le Xiao Bai, commanding an army and fight in battles was a piece of cake for him.

But, as for the last appointment memo, tough, this is really tough.

"Big Brother Zhang Hu, I don't think he would accept this offer to become Recruitment Officer!" Wu Qi told Lu Chengfeng honestly.

Lu Chengfeng rolled his eyes, then he gazed at Wu Qi and said, "As the chief right-hand man for me, this matter, you'll solve it for me!"

Wu Qi stared at Lu Chengfeng blankly, with his mouth wide opened, speechless.

Chapter 21 – Night Walk

On the evening of the same day, Wu Qi left the Mayor's Mansion, alone.

The Mayor, Yi Yan, was still weeping and wailing. He really felt a deep heartache for his losses. Yi Xing and the other were puzzled by this wild burglary as well, therefore, they didn't have any reaction to Lu Chengfeng's decisions. With the exception of the fact that the number of guards on duty at night was doubled, the Mayor's Mansion was no different that it was before.

He walked across the two main streets of Little Meng City, then walked through many alleys and backstreet. From the experience inherited from Wu Wang, Wu Qi made sure there was no one followed at his back, then only he went back to the main street and found a restaurant, bought two jars of best wine - 'Yellow Jelly', together with three roast chickens and a bunch of delicious stewed meat. He doesn't know what the meat actually is, but he does know it is tasty.

Wu Qi had quite a bit of money with him, now that Lu Chengfeng had given him ten gold coins, that's why he only bought the most expensive stuff. Just these wines and food alone it had cost him twenty-five silver coins, making the owner of the restaurant a very happy man.

After getting a wooden stick from the owner of the restaurant, Wu Qi carried the food and wine on his shoulders, walking slowly toward the Vigorous Tiger Residence, the home base for Zhang Hu and his men.

The sun was quickly falling beneath the horizon and wisps of smoke rose continuously from the chimneys in Little Meng City. This world was

full of rich energies, therefore rice and grains grew extremely well. When they were cooked, the aroma of rice filled the air of Little Meng City. Wu Qi walked along the main street while carrying those wines and dishes. The aroma of rice stimulated his appetite and made him feel comfortable, relaxed, and peaceful.

A tune was coming from afar, a girl was singing in one of the house somewhere, although it was a simple melody, but the girl had a beautiful and sweet voice, the tune carried by the breeze and reached afar, just like the taste of a refreshing and sweet side dish, adding an exotic touch to the aroma of rice.

"Perfect, perfect!"

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes and gazed around like a thief. He saw quite a lot of tradesmen walking by with pretty women at their sides, either going home or to an inn. The rich energy in this world had made the ladies really pretty and sexy. In Le Xiao Bai's experience, these ladies were the best of the best, they would have scored at least 95 out of 100 points back on Earth.

Staring at these attractive ladies, Wu Qi suddenly breathed out a long sigh. If Le Xiao Bai could have followed him, would that sex maniac fainted because of extreme happiness? The ladies here were so much better than those girls back on Earth.

Wu Qi smacked his lips and murmured, "I'll revenge for you all, trust me! I'll definitely destroy the whole clan of Green City!"

Little Meng City is not that big. After fifteen minutes of walking, Wu Qi

had arrived at the Ferocious Tiger Residence located at the east side of the city.

This is a building with a front and back yard, and an acre wide field right in front of it. A yellow flag painted with a black tiger, was waving in the breeze, hanging high up on a pole that stood right in front of the field. A few men with blades at their waists were sitting on the stone steps in front of the entrance, chit chatting while checking out those who passed by.

When they saw Wu Qi was coming to their way, these men stood up and held their fists out toward Wu Qi. Showing them the same gesture, Wu Qi carried the wines and dishes and entered into the front yard. Those men were the barbarian hunters Wu Qi had met in Meng village, and they considered him a friend.

When he entered the front yard, he saw there was a big stone slab in the middle of the field, Zhang Hu and few other men were sitting on the ground beside the stone slab. There were few jars of liquor at the side, and a lot of roast meats and vegetables on the slab. On both side of the field were two rows of rooms, the atmosphere was pretty noisy too, those barbarian hunters were having fun while eating inside the rooms.

The sound of women moaning with pleasure can be heard from few rooms, Wu Qi even saw some sexy ladies were laughing while being carried by these barbarian hunters into their rooms, then the same moaning sound started to resound from within those rooms.

With a smile on his face, Wu Qi walked to the side of the stone slab, holding his fist toward Zhang Hu and bow deeply, then he said, “Big brother Zhang Hu, you guys really know how to enjoy life!”

Zhang Hu tilting back up his head and drinking a bowl of liquor, then slammed the bowl onto the stone slab and, with a dark face, said, “Bullshit! Before you came along, we were enjoying our life here, eating, drinking, and banging women. Now that is the life! But, now that you’re here, how can we continue this pleasure?”

Taking out the Green Flame Skeleton from his sleeve, Zhang Hu threw the skeleton with a talisman on it at Wu Qi.

“I suppose the Bursary Office is in the control of that young master from Lu family? According to the market price of a lower tier magical item, just pay me one hundred gold coins for it! And this is because here is Little Meng City, if I bring it to other bigger city, a lower tier magical item won’t just get me this little amount of money, right?”

Grabbed the Green Flame Skeleton and stuck it into his sleeve, Wu Qi placed the wines and dishes he bought onto the stone slab, then he broke the clay seal of the wine jar with his palm.

A rich aroma burst out from the wine jar, Zhang Hu, and the other men stood up together had their eyes glowed immediately.

“What? ‘Yellow Jelly’? Twenty years Yellow Jelly which cost ten silver coins a jar, damn, it’s been a long time since I drink it!”

While wondered at these wines, these few adults started to fight for the wine jar. At the end, Zhuang Hu, who had the biggest muscles, defeated his opponents, getting to enjoy a half jar of this fine wine alone, and the rest of five men can only share the remaining one and a half jar of wine.

These men were good drinkers and the two big jars of wine were gone in less than fifteen minutes.

Letting out a satisfied burp, Zhang Hu gazed at Wu Qi with a smile, “Because of these two jars of fine wine, you got yourself fifteen minutes of time to say anything you want, hurry if you can’t finish in fifteen minutes then don’t waste your time!”

Sitting beside stone slab with his leg crossed, and facing toward Zhang Hu, Wu Qi said quietly, “You’re happy now. Really happy. But, when you get older and your body becomes weaker and weaker, can you still be happy like now? No one will be able to depend on you when you get old. No one will support you when you get old, either. Will you still be able to be happy at that time?”

The men’s expressions changed, the wine bowl in Zhang Hu’s palm cracked and shattered.

“When I become older and weaker, no one will depend on me. no one will support me.”

Zhang Hu repeated what Wu Qi said, with a thoughtful eye, and his body started to tremble. The other men who heard Wu Qi also had their faces darken, the were demoralized by the heavy speech.

Barbarian hunters, their life seems free and happy, but the money they earned was all from fights of life and death. Every time, when these barbarian hunters went into mountain and hunt for barbarian, some of their brothers would be gone forever. Which guy here didn’t have a single scar or injury on them? How long can they continue working this risky

career? Would they still have the strength and spirit to fight with those barbarians after they had reached the point where their bodies started to deterierate?

There were so many famous barbarian hunters whose final destination was either death or to wane away into nothingness.

What Wu Qi said was cruel. It was like a sharp dagger which ripped away the last line of defense in these men's mind, stabbing right into their hearts.

Grabbing a jar of wine beside him, Zhang Hu drank up half jar of hard liquor and, with a bitter smile, looked at Wu Qi and said, "Brother Wu Qi, you really know how to talk!"

Throwing the wine jar onto ground, Zhang Hu became agitated. Then he snapped, "But, even if we want to work for a young master from a wealthy family, there are so many of them to choose from. Lu Chengfeng, the eldest son of the Liyang Lu family, was banished to the outlands, he is just a broken-down young master. What advantages can we get if we work for him?"

Wu Qi folded his arms and stared at Zhang Hu, who was just blowing off steam, and said, with a playful laugh, "Helping one when they have nothing means much, helping one when they have everything means little. If we work for Lu Chengfeng now, we can work together and either kill the current Mayor, or chase him out of here, after that, Little Meng City will be in our hands!"

Wu Qi extended his hand and pointed around, while laughing aloud he

said, “As long as we have Little Meng City in our control, we’ll control the eight thousand City Guards as well. then we’ll train a few hundred deathsworn. With all of this, even though he was a broken-down young master, we can still make him into something big!”

Zhang Hu and few of his brothers looked at each other, it seems like they were tempted.

Wu Qi let out a loud laugh, “Think of it this way, with all the materials and resources produced in Little Meng City, what is the amount of money we can collect each year? In this outland, we can easily build an army, consisting of three thousand to five thousand soldiers, without anyone’s knowing.”

Zhang Hu took a deep breath, he stared at Wu Qi and said with a deep voice, “What you just said was a bold statement. How dare you!”

Wu Qi didn’t stare back at Zhang Hu, he just calmly raised his head and stared at the moon high up in the sky, smiling. and said, “The higher of risk, the greater the reward. If big brother Zhang Hu decides he wants to spend the rest of his life as an ordinary man, then just forget that I was even here today.”

Reaching his hand to the Green Flame Skeleton in his sleeve, Wu Qi simply threw it on the ground, stepping on it and crushes it into ashes.

“A lower-tier magical item? This is nothing!”

Wu Qi took out few egg-sized pearls, which he had stolen from Yi Yan’s

secret chamber, then he threw them onto the stone slab. The pearls were spinning and reflecting the moonlight, creating series of light gleams that looked magnificent.

"Just these few pearls alone each more than ten thousand gold coins. A lower-tier magical item, is it really worth the time and effort of a hero like you, brother Zhang Hu, to fight with those bastards? That Huo Biao, and the Bursary Officer fof the Yi family. In my mind, they are no better than pigs and dogs. Big brother, are you really willing to fight with those foolish bastards over such worthless things?"

Zhang Hu took a deep breath, then he roared deeply from his chest. He stood up suddenly, stared into Wu Qi's eyes, and yelled out, "Wu Qi, I am convinced by you! Fine, fine, fine. Let me, Zhang Hu, have another bet, giving myself a chance to win a prosperous future. You better not let me and my brothers down!"

As Wu Qi turned around and left Vigorous Tiger Residence, he smiled and said, "I never let down any of my friends! Big brother Zhang Hu, the new Recruitment Officer, please report yourself to the General's Office tomorrow morning!"

Thrown backhanded, the official memo, signed by Lu Chengfu, that appointed Zhang Hu as Recruitment Officer, dropped in front of Zhang Hu.

After having a great drinking session with Zhang Hu, and spending some time to talking them into joining him, Wu Qi left the Vigorous Tiger Residence only to find that it was already midnight. There was barely anybody still on the streets now. Wu Qi hurried back to the Mayor's Mansion, pretending he was drunk and bumping into things here and

there, he stumbled back to his room with the smell of alcohol all over his body.

After taking a bath under the serving of his two serving ladies, Wu Qi lay on his bed and fell asleep.

After waiting for both serving ladies to fall asleep, Wu Qi quietly got up from his bed, just like last night, and pushed the acupuncture points on the serving ladies to make sure they wouldn't wake up when he was not there.

Just like the night before, Wu Qi covered himself in mist with the Innate Water Energy Shift, then he went into the residence of Yi Xing and the other siblings of Yi Yan.

The Director of Records, the Director of Internal Affairs, and the Director of Security. all the money and valuables in their residences were not even half of what Yi Yan had. It only took Wu Qi around half an hour to steal everything from their storehouses, together with all the jewelry of their wives.

After some restless hours, Wu Qi had buried all the stolen money and valuables in the same hole in the woods, he carefully covered the hole with some dried leaves and wooden sticks, and only then did he return to the Mayor's Mansion. None of the guards even noticed him, and the dozens of fierce dogs on guard never let out a single bark.

Early the next morning, three extremely loud screams burst out from the backyard of the Mayor's Mansion.

“My money, my money, my money!”

Chapter 22 – Expel

Early the next morning, the Mayor's Mansion was in hustle and bustle again.

This time, those six hundred guards, who had been on duty the night before, were lining the Square in front of the Mayor's Mansion and getting their asses beaten. Six hundred naked butts were lining up and getting canned. Blood splashed from the shining white butts and painful screams resounded, seemingly loud enough to reach heaven. It was a truly remarkable view.

Early in the morning, Wu Qi had prepared himself to witness this remarkable show. He had a bowl of porridge in one of his hands, two sweet and delicious pastries in the other, and was squatting right in front of the front door of the General's Office. When those guards screamed, he drank a mouthful of fragrant 'Golden Rice' porridge. When Directors of Records, Internal Affairs, and Security howled, he took a bite of the delicious pastry. What an enjoyable moment.

While Wu Qi was drinking and eating happily, Lu Chengfeng, who had just finished his porridge, walked out from the General's Office. Some joy came into his eyes at the sight of those shining white butts on the Square, then he lightly kicked one of Wu Qi's boot with his feet.

"Don't be so obvious when you're delighting in others misfortunes. Go back inside and eat, don't stand here, if they saw you here, they would know that you are enjoying watching their sorrowfulness! This is not good for our image."

“Yes, yes.” Wu Qi replied and stood up, taking a look again at those hard working City Guards who were canning their own colleagues, trying to memorize the scene. Then he shook his head, breathed out a long sigh, and turned around, going back into General Office.

Lu Cengfeng made a coughing sound suddenly and, with a low voice, asked, “Little Meng City was a peaceful place before we came. But, since we arrived, the Mayor and his siblings have been repeatedly visited by burglars, I heard even their silk underwear was stolen. This is weird, really weird!”

Hiolding the bowl with one handl, Wu Qi turned his head to Lu Chengfeng, and said contemplatively, “Heaven watches us from above. Who are we to question their judgement?”

“Heaven’s judgement?” Lu Chengfeng cupped his chin in his hand, and stared at the sky thoughtfully. After a while, he turned back and looked at Wu Qi, who was strolling back into the General’s Office, then he shook his head. “Could it really have been done by this guy? He stole everything from three storehouses in just one night, that would require an amazing amount of skill! But, it would be nice if really was him. The next time I go back home to pay my respects to the ancestor, I’ll bring him with me!”

Yi Yan and his siblings, four of the highest ranked officers in Little Meng City, were crying their hearts out, crying because they had lost the money they had spent several years squeezing out of the citizens in the city. In an outland like Little Meng City, it took them three years of hard work to save up this wealth, now their harvest had disappeared overnight. How could they accept this cruel fact?

The Mayor’s Mansion was in havoc, therefore, nobody knew or even

bothered about the incident where Lu Chengfeng had fired all four of his subordinates in the General's Office.

Taking advantage of the havoc, Wu Qi brought Zhang Hu into the General's Office and took his place as Lu Chengfeng's right-hand man. Those nearly one hundred barbarian hunters had been transformed into the personal guards of the General of Little Meng City. Laohei, who was the new Bursary Officer, unlocked the weapons warehouse and carefully picked out some fine weapons and armors and gave them to Zhang Hu and his men, raising their combat strength by a few levels.

After a few restless hours, noon had come.

Everyone in the Mayor's Mansion had stormed out in search for the culprit. They searched every single street and alley and caught anyone with unfamiliar faces. The embarrassed and angry Yi Yan and his gang didn't care what these peoples were here for, as long as they looked suspicious, they would be caught and sent to the jail. In just a single morning, a few hundred unlucky guys had been locked up in jail.

Fear spread quickly through Little Meng City, and people stopped caring what Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng were up to.

Noon time, on the drill ground west side of Little Meng City, a huge, black flag was whipping in the strong wind. On the flag was a Vermillion Bird with its wings spread. A character '吕' was embossed on the body of this Vermillion Bird with silver threads. This is the national flag of the Lu Kingdom.

More than a dozen of these huge flags surrounded the drill grounds,

making loud whipping sounds under the strong wind. A restless atmosphere covered the entire drill ground as over seven thousand City Guards were standing straight, looking nervous and feeling uneasy.

Black clothes and black armor. Even all the weapons were painted in black. This huge pitch black army stood straight and no one dared to make any noises. Besides the whipping sound from those flags, the only sound that could be heard was breathing.

On the east side of the drill ground stood a dirt platform, and a big chair was placed on it. Lu Chengfeng, wearing full armor and having a sword on his waist, was sitting on it with a straight back, examining these few thousand soldiers and officials. His face was dark, and a killing intent filled his eyes.

Zhang Hu and nearly a hundred personal guards of General were standing in a straight line in front of dirt platform, all of them were had baleful looks, gazing viciously at the few thousand City Guards in front of them. With their experience hunting barbarians in the mountain, these barbarian hunters were ferocious hunters, and they had killed people before. Therefore, when they released their killing spirit, these City Guards were suppressed and did not dare to even move a little bit.

Placing his hands on his back, Wu Qi stood beside Lu Chengfeng and stared at these City Guards thoughtfully.

Judging with Wu Wang's experience, these City Guards had strong and ripped bodies and they were wearing fine armors and using the best weapons. But, they lacked the true spirit of a soldier. These City Guards can't be considered true soldiers at all.

“With the quality of these troops, if the barbarians come here, they are going to have a tough time!” Wu Qi grinded his teeth and spoke sarcastically.

Lu Chengfeng smacks his lips and humphed. He tilted his head and gazed at Wu Qi, and asked out of curiosity, “Wu Qi, you know how to train an army?”

Wu Qi nodded his head naturally, “If I don’t know how to train an army, then there isn’t anyone in this world that knows how!”

Lu Chengfeng became startled by what he said, and Xiaohei, who was standing on his left, also turned to Wu Qi in awe.

Wu Qi was not aware that, in this world, much of the knowledge was kept in the hands of those wealthy and influential families. The scrolls and books about military strategy and tactics only can be learned by few top families secretly. As an ordinary civilian, he may have learned strong and powerful martial arts, he may be talented, but there was some knowledge that he shouldn’t know at all!

Military strategy was one of the most important aspects of a kingdom. Those who was well versed in the art of military matters were usually top notch Generals of a kingdom. A military official with a poor background, such as Zhang Hu, could only become a General who leads an army and fights in battle. It is impossible to ask him to train an army and apply strategies or tactics during warfare.

“You know how to train an army? When we are free, would you discuss

this with me?" Lu Chengfeng looked at Wu Qi in doubt.

Wu Qi sighed, then nodded his head and said, "Fine, when I am in good mood, I will teach you something."

Being lazy to discuss further on this topic, Wu Qi whispered to Lu Chengfeng, "Let's have them stand for some more time, the sun is hot now,the perfect temperature to bake these City Guards. After they have baked for an hour under this hot sun, no matter if they have planned something before this or are trying to do something bad, I'm sure they will lose their spirit!"

Lu Chengfeng smiled, and secretly gave Wu Qi a thumbs up, praising him with an evil tone, "Marvelous!"

Therefore, Wu Qi stood there and kept quiet and Lu Chengfeng sat on his chair without saying anything, Xiaohei, Zhang Hu just kept their mouths shut. With their superior sitting quietly in front of them, none of these few thousand City Guards dare to say a word. The hot sun kept pouring its energy onto the silent drill ground, the temperature started to build up slowly.

From noon until now, they were let standing and baking for three hours.

Xiaohei had a dark skin, therefore he absorbed more heat than others, and thus sweat had wet all of his clothes and armor. However, he had good stamina and a strong body, thus he was still glaring with his eyes and staring at those City Guards.

Zhang Hu and his men were suffered from the intense heat too, but among these barbarian hunters, the weakest were also mid-level Practitioner. As long as they circulated their innate energy, they can still strengthen their spirits and stand firmly.

Lu Chengfeng was sitting on his big chair, it didn't require him to use much energy.

Within the water energy veins in Wu Qi's arms, innate water energy was flowing like tidal waves and unleashing a cold breeze around his body. Therefore, he never felt even the slightest bit of heat at all. He didn't even have a single drop of sweat, with both of his hands on his back, he raised up his head and stared at the sky, like he was thinking about something.

This world was rich with natural energies, therefore the people here had ten times better physiques than the people back on Earth. But, the heat from the sun here was much worse than the Earth, the energy poured out by the Sun was proportionate with the natural energies. After being exposed to the intense heat for nearly three hours, some guys had started to lose consciousness, few deputy Generals, who were wearing fish-scaled armor, had their eyes roll back and had fainted.

Lu Chengfeng was infuriated, he stood up hurriedly, pointing his finger at those fainted deputy Generals and scolded, "Useless fools, this is ridiculous. As a deputy General, you can't even resist the heat and fainted in front of your own soldiers. Can an official like this lead an army? Does he even have the ability to lead his soldiers? Man, strip their helmet and armor, remove their weapons and chase them out from drill ground, their military rank is removed!"

Zhang Hu and few of his men leap forward like some hungry wolves,

stripping all the cloth and armor from these unlucky deputy Generals, leaving them with only underpants. Then they dragged these half-naked deputy Generals out from drill ground, dropped them under some trees outside of the field. Few memos drafted by Lu Chengfeng were thrown beside them, it was the official memo of removing them as the deputy Generals.

Witnessed their colleagues were stripped and dragged away, few other deputy Generals started to yell.

“It is unfair for General to do this!”

These deputy Generals were trying to provoke all the other soldiers to challenge Lu Chengfeng, but before anything can happen, Wu Qi had jumped off from dirt platform and rushed in front of them.

“Unfair? What is unfair?”

Wu Qi hooted angrily at these men, then he struck them with the Hand of Web. Forming an invisible freezing whirlpool in his palm, he grabbed the two deputy Generals who were yelling and pressed onto their dantian with his palms.

The freezing force from his palm penetrated into their dantian and shattered the tiny amount of energy in it. Simply throwing these two men away, Wu Qi pulled over another two deputy Generals, who were also shouting and yelling and, with same tactics, he pressed onto their dantian.

Before these deputy Generals could successfully create a disturbance, their cultivation had been completely destroyed by Wu Qi, and they suffered serious injuries and fall down.

Wu Qi retracted his hand and took a few steps back, then he shouted, “Spreading false news, creating disturbances, according to military laws, they have earned themselves the death sentence! Xiaohei, chop off their heads!”

Xiaohei let out a dark laugh and jumped off the dirt platform, with few quick steps, he had reached the sides of those deputy Generals, then he drew out his huge blade. Under the yelling and screaming from these soldiers, the heads of these five deputy Generals had flown off from their necks and their blood burst high up into the air, like a fountain.

The killing spirit in drill ground became higher and higher. The orderly lined up soldiers had started to boil in rage.

Suddenly, Lu Chengfeng humphs coldly and, with a loud voice, shouted, “What are you guys doing? Trying to revolt?”

Revolt was a serious crime in the military. these soldiers immediately stopped their movements. The rest of the deputy Generals, Captains, and Lieutenants were still trying to provoke these soldiers quietly, but under the threat of serious punishment, besides a few soldiers, who else dared to make a sound?

Lu Chengfeng sneered, then grabbed a stack of official memos out of his bag.

“To all City Guards officials, you are fired! Strip your armor and leave behind your weapons. Then get the hell out of this drill ground. Those who disobey forfeit their lives!”

Looking at the bloody heads on the ground, then staring at Zhang Hu and his vigorous men, all of the officials had blank faces.

Under the stern orders of Lu Chengfeng, all the officers of the City Guards were expelled from the troop.

Chapter 23 – Tough Situation

After expelling all the redundant officials in the City Guards through thunderous and bloody tactics, a thorough background check was carried out on all seven thousand soldiers on the drill grounds, and only approximately two thousand of them were the real City Guards, the rest were all temporarily hired by those officials to fool Lu Chengfeng!

While these identities exposed, the soldiers were worrying what Lu Chengfeng would do to them, Wu Qi suggested, no matter these people were the real soldier or some scumbags in Little Meng City previously, from now on they would have their name recorded in the book, and become part of the army for real, officially becoming the City Guards of Little Meng City.

Lu Chengfeng spent all of his personal money and rewarded these soldiers who were still suffering from the shock, temporarily calming these people down. Then, Zhang Hu and his men had their names recorded in the book as well, and became the new officials for this army of City Guards.

After all this, Wu Qu made another suggestion. He suggested to reorganize all the battalions and have all the soldiers assigned to a different group, with this they can keep the influence from their previous official to the minimum and maximize the stability of the newly organized city Guards.

After all, Lu Chengfeng was the authentic General of Little Meng City. As long as he rewards the troops handsomely, together with tough training from Zhang Hu and his men, all their bad intentions would

become sweat and tears. As time went by, he would be able to win the hearts of these soldiers. In the end, the City Guards of Little Meng City would become Lu Chengfeng's true personal army.

Ordering Zhang Hu and his men to lead those soldiers back to their respective camps, Lu Chengfeng went back to General Residency in an extremely good mood.

"Wu Qi, if not for Yi Yang and his siblings metting with such an unlucky event, I don't think we could take control of this army so easily. Although there are less than two thousand real soldiers among them, the quality of the rest is not bad. They should become great soldiers with proper training."

Staring at Wu Qi thoughtfully, Lu Chengfeng said with a smile on his face, "Speaking about this, I think we really need to thank that burglar who stole everything from the Mayor's Mansion!"

Wu Qi raised his head and stared at the sky, then, with a grin, he said, "A good person with have good karma and be rewarded in the future. That burglar has been a great help to the young master. I'm sure he will be well rewarded in the future!"

Lu Chengfeng nodded his head, then he kept staring at Wu Qi, but at the end, he still shook his head. The burglary really didn't look like something Wu Qi could do. Those few hundred City Guards who were on duty were not easy to deal with! Wu Qi was only a peak Houtian Practitioner, with that level of cultivation, could he really sneak into the Mayor's Mansion and steal so many treasures overnight?

Wu Qi threw a gazed back at Lu Chengfeng, then he smiled, “I’m sure Mayor and his siblings have sort of recovered from their losses today. The men they arranged in General Residency had been chased away, those useless fools in City Guards were expelled, all the men they arranged in City Guards had been removed by us. We better be careful, they might play some tricks on us soon!”

Lu Chengfeng frowned. He stared at his feet and thought for a while, then, with a shook he said, “I don’t think so. There are rules among all the influential families, after all, I am wearing a hat that tells them I am from Lu family of Liyang. Also, I am the General of Little Meng City, what happened just now was within my authority, unless I was planning to revolt, they can’t say or do anything on City Guards management.”

Hearing what Lu Chengfeng said, Wu Qi just kept quiet. Maybe he was right, or maybe, he might be wrong.

But the fatty ,Yi Yan... Would he really give up on such a gold mine as the City Guards? The salaries of few thousand soldiers every year, this was one massive profit!

Just a year ago, the previous General of Little Meng City was killed in a battle with barbarians, and great numbers of officials were killed too. After the battle, Yi Yang and his siblings immediately put their hands into the City Guards and pushed aside the few talented officials, replacing all the skillful soldiers, either by forcing them to leave the army or transferring them to be the guards for the Mayor’s Mansion.

At the end, the only battalion that still remain at their full combat strength was the one that was stationed at Meng Village. This was the last elite battalion left by the previous General.

With the manipulation of Yi Yan and his siblings, the salaries of few thousand soldiers became a massive profit for them. In just the first year, these City Guards never went on any exercises so there was no wear and tear on their weapons and armors, however, the Bursary Officer appointed by Yi Yan was still reporting the expenses that a normal eight thousand soldier army would, being resupplied with a few thousand sets of armor and weapons, which all went to Yi Yan.

The Lu Kingdom was rich and prosperous and all of their soldiers were equipped with fine armors and weapons. Therefore, a complete set of military equipment was pretty expensive, and the profits from selling this equipment were enough to add another layer of fat onto Yi Yan's tummy.

All the information was coming from Zhang Hu, as he had lived in Little Meng City for past few years and was well versed with all the changes the City Guards went through. Also, Zhang Hu knew really well about what kind of person the Mayor, Yi Yan, was. Therefore, Wu Qi didn't believe that Yi Yan, who had recovered from his poor emotional state, would just remove his hands from the City Guards and let Lu Chengfeng do whatever he wanted.

Gazing at the confidence and high spirit of Lu Chengfeng, Wu Qi let out a cough and pointed at his tightly wrapped right shoulder.

Lu Chengfeng's face darkened instantly. Sometimes, between clever men, a gesture could tell what they were trying to say.

The right-hand man of Yi Xing provoked Wu Qi face to face, this was equal to Yi Xing provoked Lu Chengfeng face to face. Also, Yi Yan and his

siblings were sent to Little Meng City, a remote outland city, to be the Mayor and other high ranking officials, this means they were only the sons of concubines. By provoking him openly, this made Lu Chengfeng sense there was some conspiracy going on here. The status as the eldest son of the Lu family seems to not be that useful here.

Just as expected, when they approached the front entrance of Mayor Mansion, the meatball Yi Yan had brought his men and blocked the way. When he saw Lu Chengfeng, Yi Yan immediately jumped up and yelled, “Lu Chengfeng, I know you are the General of Little Meng City, but how could you be so reckless? You expelled all the senior officials in the army, by doing this, don’t you cripplehol the combat strength of this army?”

Wu Qi raised his head up and stared into far bright sky, then he saw a large white cloud rolling by. The environment here was really awesome!

Lu Chengfeng steped forward with his back straight, then stared into Yi Yan’s eyes and sneered, “I am the General of Little Meng City. No matter how reckless I am, everything I have done has been within my authority! If Mayor is not happy about that, you can just report this to the Government!”

Yi Yan shuts his mouth instantly, with his eyes starting to quiver. It was impossible to tell what he was thinking.

Patting on Yi Yan’s tummy, which was bigger than a pregnant ladies belly, Lu Chengfeng said, in a cold voice, “Those ridiculous past transactions within the army, I will ignore and forget everything because of the Ruyang Yi family, and I’ll burn all the books of accounting tonight. But, from now on, no one is allowing to put their hands on the City Guards. Also, all the salaries and army provisions have to be supplied to

us on time and in full amount, if not, we will have issues!”

With blade-like vision, Lu Chengfeng gazed at Yi Yan and few of his siblings behind him, then he snapped, “I know what you all think about me! But please don’t forget this, I will always be the eldest son of the Lu family, and my mother, the Maiden Ronyang, she is still the lady of the Lu family, and the only daughter of Marquis Yuanyang!”

Yi Yan twisted his lips, then a bright smile jumped onto his meaty face. He hurriedly grabbed onto Lu Chengfeng’s hand.

“Brother Lu, brother Lu, I think you had misunderstood Yi Yan’s meaning! Yi Yan was worried the combat strength of City Guards would decrease, giving those barbarians the opportunity to harm our people! It was out of good intention, good intention! Ha ha ha, I still need to manage something back in my mansion, I’ll take my leave now! Oh, brother Lu, remember to come to my mansion for a dinner a few days from now! Ha ha ha, remember, you must give me face and come!”

With a bright smile on his face, Yi Yan moved out from the front entrance.

Lu Chengfeng sneered, then he walked into Mayor’s Mansion with big steps. With steady steps, Wu Qi followed behind, when he walked beside Yi Yan, he suddenly turned his head and said to him, “Why is your honorable afraid of those barbarians? With just the thick walls of the Mayor’s Mansion alone, and those few thousand elite guards everywhere in the Mayor’s Mansion, how could those barbarians possibly come in here?”

Yi Yan might be polite to Lu Chengfeng, but he definitely didn't take Wu Qi seriously. He let out an arrogant humph, raised his head up, and said, with an indifferent tone, "What do you know? I'm a kind hearted man and I felt pity for the civilians of Little Meng City! If those barbarians are here, they are the one who will suffer!"

Wu Qi turned his body and stood face to face with Yi Yan, then he pointed at the backyard of Mayor Mansion, laughing and said, "Your honorable is a wealthy man, if you really pity your people, then just take some money and have the city wall fixed, make them as thick as the walls of the Mayor's Mansion, with that, they should be safe from the threat of barbarians, right?"

With an odd smile, Wu Qi strolled back into the Mayor's Mansion.

Yi Yan, had finally calmed down from the grief of his losses, but what Wu Qi said just now had reminded him about the burglary. Yi Yan widened his mouth suddenly and let out a heartbroken cry, "My money, my money, my money! Tell me, who was the bastard that stolen all my money!"

Yi Xing, Yi De and Yi Cu who were standing behind Yi Yan were crying out at the same time, "Brother, you still have that golden bed left, but for us, even all of our silk underwear were stolen! This bloody thief, we must catch him alive!"

The Yi siblings started their drama again, in front of the entrance, when the weak and fatty Yi Yan thought about his massive losses, he can't stand anymore and had his body trembled. His eyeballs rolled back and he fainted on the spot. Even when he was frothing and fainted on the floor, he was still kept murmuring 'my money, my money'!

Wu Qi turned around and looked over his shoulder at the chaotic scene, then he just walked back to General Residency while laughing out loud.

When he stepped into the main hall of General's Office, he saw Lu Chengfeng had sat down with a dark face together with Laohei, gazing at each other in speechless dismay.

Wu Qi walked up to them hurriedly, looking at both of them curiously and asked, "What happened? Young master? Laohei? What are you guys doing now?"

Letting out a light cough, Lu Chengfeng rubbed on his cheek and made his expression relax. He stared back at Wu Qi and, with a dry laugh, said, "Back in the drill ground just now, I had rewarded a lot of money to the army in order to win their hearts. And, Laohei told me just now, that I, your young master, only have ten gold coins left!"

Wu Qi frowned, he nodded thoughtfully and said, "This indeed is a serious problem. A great man can't lose his authority for a day, and he can't even spend a day without money. Don't tell me you are going to live your life with Government salary? How much is your salary for a year?"

Lu Chengfeng was frowning as well, he knocked on the table with his fingers, shook his head and said, "Equal to the total salaries of one hundred soldiers."

Wu Qi stared at Lu Chengfeng, speechless.

Unlike Yi Yan, who kept squeezing money from his people, Lu Chengfeng can't be a Government Officer that earns his living with other people's money. He was the General of Little Meng City. In order to maximize his potential, he needed to spend all his money to expand the City Guards and his own personal guards and right-hand men. By behaving like Yi Yan, earning his money from the City Guards, Lu Chengfeng would lose the respect of his soldiers.

Lu Chengfeng needed a lot of money, only then could he make the City Guards of Little Meng City into a strong army, only then can he recruit a lot of right-hand men to help him.

Especially for the right-hand men, Lu Chengfeng, as a young master from a wealthy and influential family, he had only two right-hand men right now, Wu Qi and Zhang Hu, if his peers knew about this, that would be very disgraceful. Without many talented and powerful right-hand men, no one would really listen to Lu Chengfeng, even if he was the eldest son of the Lu family.

Sitting down beside Lu Chengfeng with his leg crossed, Wu Qi thought for some time, then he said slowly, "Maybe, I can help young master solve this problem."

Lu Chengfeng immediately felt surprised.

Narrowing his eyes, Wu Qi hid both of his hands in his sleeves, and, with an indifferent tone, he said, "But I want to know, as the eldest son of the Lu family from Liyang, why is young master so poor? It's fine to lack in money, but you were sent to this remote place to be a low ranked General. Also, the Yi family, who are friends with the Lu family, yet even the sons of their concubines dare to provoke young master openly. I must

know what this is all about?"

Laohei's face became even darker and he gave Wu Qi a fierce gaze.

But Lu Chengfeng only breathed out a long sigh, then he looked at Wu Qi and asked, "Do you really want to know this?"

Wu Qi nodded his head hurriedly and the naughty part of his soul, which belongs to Le Xiao Bai, emerged.

"I really wish to know this!"

Chapter 24 – Partner In Crime

Lu Cengfeng's story was simple, but at the same time absurd.

His mother, the Maiden Rongyang, the only daughter of Marquis Yuanyang in the Lu Kingdom, was a child from a noble family with a great background, however, she was known for her bad behavior.

Marquis Yuanyang and the previous chief of the Lu family had agreed to a marriage arrangement for the eldest children from both families. Marquis Yuanyang had much influence and power in the military of the Lu Kingdom, whereas the Lu Family had great power among the civil officers within the government, they were also a wealthy family and having their net worth ranked within the top three families in the Lu Kingdom. The marriage arrangement was to create an alliance between the two great powers that would provide mutual benefits.

But, the Maiden Rongyang had done something that disgraced Marquis Yuanyang, and almost made the previous chief of Lu Family die of extreme anger.

Just three months before the marriage ceremony, the Maiden Rongyang was found pregnant, and the child was Lu Chengfeng. She never told anybody about this, and was married to her husband with great glory. Just four months after the marriage ceremony, she had given birth to Lu Chengfeng.

This is something that was really disgraceful, let alone the Lu Family from Liyang, even ordinary families wouldn't accept this. But, for some unknown reason, Marquis Yuanyang and the Lu Family had this news

covered up, and thus, Lu Chengfeng had become the eldest son of the Lu Family.

It was not difficult to imagine how Lu Chengfeng, the eldest son of the Lu Family, would be treated. He was raised with a golden spoon in his mouth. When the other children of the Maiden Rongyang had grown up, and Lu Chengfeng had become the potential threat to the inheritance of the Lu Family, he was 'exiled' to Little Meng City by the chief of the Lu Family.

Without any unexpected events, and if Lu Chengfeng was not putting in any more effort, he would have to spend the rest of his life in Little Meng City.

Keeping his story simple and straightforward, Lu Chengfeng told Wu Qi about his past, then he tried to remain calm and asked Wu Qi, "This is my origin, does it make it difficult for you to accept me?"

Xiaohei and Laohei lowered their heads and sighed. They had seen a lot of those young masters from rich and influential families who immediately stopped associating with Lu Chengfeng after they learned about his origin. Everytime Lu Chengfeng had to listen to their insults and laughing, each and every single time, Laohei and Xiaohei, who were loyal to Lu Chengfeng, would feel as if there was a sharp blade cutting at their hearts, making them feel a sad pain for their master.

Wu Qi looked at Lu Chengfeng disapprovingly, with a smile on his face, he said, "I thought it was just sex before marriage? What's so surprising about that?"

It was nothing more than Lu Chengfeng's mother having a one night stand before her marriage, and, in this era, they simply didn't have any effective birth-control methods, thus Lu Chengfeng was accidentally conceived. This kind of story was so normal back on Earth that Wu Qi had heard far more ridiculous stories than this, how would he be surprised by this? How could he discriminate against Lu Chengfeng?

"No matter what, your parents raised you up, even if they really did something wrong to you, and made the world look down upon you, you still need to stand up and work your way out. You need to live a life such that no one else can look down on you anymore. One day, when you are standing at the peak of your life and look down upon these people, you win the chance to slap their faces, and that will be the greatest time of your life!"

After delivered a long speech, Wu Qi yawned and stretched his back.

But, Lu Chengfeng became super excited by the speech, he stood up and kept walking back and forth in the hall while rubbing his hands.

"You're right, you're so right. Wu Qi, what you just said did make sense! When I stand on the peak of my life and look down upon all mortals, who would have the right to laugh at me?" Lu Chengfeng was so excited and kept nodding his head, "I must work my way up with all my effort, I want to let those people witness this, although I, Lu Chengfeng have left them, I can still become something great!"

"That's for sure, that's definitely going to happen!"

Wu Qu kept his smiling and encouraged Lu Chengfeng. The faster and

higher Lu Chengfeng climbed up in this world, the better for Wu Qi. He heard someone tell him, those wealthy and influential families worshipped cultivators? He really wanted to know what the cultivation level of those cultivators was, and is there anything they own that Wu Qi can steal?

It was too bad that Wu Qi was weak at the moment, or else he would just ditch Lu Chengfeng and explore the world himself. His only had the cultivation level of peak Houtian Warrior. Even Lu Chengfeng was stronger than him, and this world was a messy, complicated world. Before he possessed the power and strength that was enough to protect himself; before having more knowledge on this world, Wu Qi wouldn't leave Lu Cheng Feng.

Lu Chengfeng was the biggest umbrella for Wu Qi, the key for him to enter this world!

Wu Qi stood up and looked at the sky outside the General's Office. It was getting darker. With a deep voice he murmured, "Since young master has been so honest with me, I, Wu Qi, will be honest to get what we need."

"Crucibles?" Lu Chengfeng stared at Wu Qi with a puzzled expression, "Why do you need crucibles?"

Wu Qi stared back at Lu Chengfeng surprisingly, then he laughed and said, "We need them to melt gold! I happen to know of a 'source' of gold. We will need to melt the gold down with crucibles. Only then we can sell it off, unless you think we can sell it in it's original form?"

Lu Chengfeng blinked his eyes fast and said to himself, “Someone told me, Yi Yan had a bed made entirely from pure gold! That alone should have cost him at least thirty thousand gold coins!”

Reaching his hand into his sleeve and searching for some time, Lu Chengfeng then took out a black dagger and passed to Wu Qi, “This is a fine cutting device. By injecting your innate energy into it, you can cut through gold and jade easily. Hmm, are you really that confident that you can do this?”

Wu Qi took the dagger and nodded his head in a manner full of confidence, “Young master, you just stay here and prepare the crucibles. This will be an easy task!”

Lu Chengfeng had his face twitched, he gazed at Wu Qi and asked, “Be blunt with me. Are you the burglar who stole everything from Yi Yan?”

Wu Qi touched the edges of the dagger with his fingers, staring at the sky afar and remain silence. His face became blanked and obviously had his mind went somewhere far away, totally ignoring what Lu Chengfeng was asking.

Lu Chengfeng puffed out his cheeks, then he shook and breathed out a helpless sigh, “I never dreamed that I, Lu Chengfeng, would have a chief right-hand man that was a thief!”

Wu Qi never responded. He just kept staring at the sky with a pure and flawless smile on his face, just like the smile of a newborn baby, pure and innocent.

It was midnight again.

With a faded water vapor covering his body, Wu Qi sneaked into Yi Yan's home again. The innate water energy flows within veins in Wu Qi's legs, making him move like a stream during Spring time, overcoming those obstacles and barriers swiftly, without making any noise or kicking up any dust.

After suffering great losses because of the burglaries, the number of guards on night duty had increased by three times. Outside of Yi Yan's bedroom, the serving ladies had been replaced by a few muscular and strong guards.

But these defenses meant nothing to Wu Qi. Those guards outside of bedroom never realized that Wu Qi was nearby, Wu Qi simply dashed to their backs and gave each of them a punch on their head, and they all fainted without making any noise.

Wu Qi then sneaked into Yi Yan's bedroom and pressed his finger on Yi Yan's 'Sleeping' Acupoint, making him fall into the deepest slumber.

With his full strength, Wu Qi pulled on one of Yi Yan's arms and dragged him from his bed onto the ground. After he finished doing that, Wu Qi had sweat all over and was breathing rapidly. He really wondered what had this meatball had eaten all this time. With Yi Yan's height of more than two meters, his weight was definitely more than two hundred fifty kilograms. With Wu Qi's full strength, he can barely move his body.

Putting on a bitter smile, Wu Qi wiped his sweat and started to examine the room.

Wu Qi was astonished by the speed Yi Yan earned his money, because, in just two days, he had stored up a few hundred silver and gold coins and dozens of gemstones and jadestones in the secret chamber. Who knows where he squeezed all these fortunes from. Of course, Wu Qi wouldn't be so polite with him, he grabbed everything and packed them up, then brought all these treasures back to General Residency immediately.

At the backyard of General Residency, within Lu Chengfeng's bedroom, he was waiting in deep anticipation for Wu Qi's arrival.

When Wu Qi brought back a big bag of gold and silver, gemstones, and jadestone to his bedroom, Lu Chengfeng took out his precious lower tier magical item 'Little 25th Lamp' immediately without saying anything. He inserted a fire stone in it, forming a seal with his hand, and pointed at the lamp. Then a tiny hair sized thread of red flame burst out, twisting at least a foot high into the air and increased the temperature within the bedroom.

Lu Chengfeng grabbed few hundred gold coins and threw them into the tiny thread of flame. These gold coins floated within the flame and, in just a blink of an eye, they were melted into liquid form.

Lu Chengfeng changed a few patterns of seal with his fingers, then the liquid gold was divided into sixteen equal portions, each weighing 500 grams. After that he changed the seal again, this time the sixteen portions of gold liquid transformed into the flat and square shape of gold bars. After doing this, Lu Chengfeng shut the flame and the liquid gold cool down immediately.

Wu Qi was impressed by what he saw. He can't help but clap his hands. Although he had inherited the Scroll of Stealing, he, basically, had nothing. He didn't have any magical items or weapons to use. He had never seen something so amazing before.

Lu Chengfeng breathed out a sigh of relief, raised his sleeve and wiped away some of the sweat on his forehead. He gazed at Wu Qi proudly and said, "I spent eighteen years taught myself all of this. It was a tough journey, but, if you are interested, I can teach you!"

Wu Qi jumped out from the windows while laughing, and never bothered to reply.

With the Scroll of Stealing, Lu Chengfeng's trick was nothing for Wu Qi! Lu Chengfeng was a man from a wealthy family in his early twenties, but he hadn't broken through to the Xiantian level yet, and need to use a magical item to produce magical flame! Wu Qi sighed silently, and thought to himself, this Lu Chengfeng was just like a beggar, and the beggar was trying to teach a multi-millionaire something!

He hurried back to Yi Yan's bedroom quietly. Wu Qi then took out the dagger, and started to work on the bed. He cut off a cube shaped piece of gold weighing about fifty kilograms, then he found a black cloth and put the gold cube in it. Then he carried it all the way back to General Residency.

There was only one wall between the General's Residency and Yi Yan's backyard. Wu Qi had no issues with committing an easy and pleasant crime.

Each trip would only cost him fifteen minutes, and the reward was 50 kilograms of pure gold. Although Yi Yan's golden bed was huge, it only took Wu Qi two hours to completely dismantle the bad, which was turned into hundreds of smaller gold cubes and placed into Lu Chengfeng's bedroom.

This night, Lu Chengfeng was exhausted. He had used up all his innate energy, and one whole piece of firestone. He had managed to melt all the gold into bricks, which were now neatly placed underneath his bed.

There was a logo of three leaves flower on all the gold bricks, that was the symbol of Lu family. With the symbol, no one could say these gold bricks was from Yi Yan's bed, they can only treat it as the money Lu Chengfeng brought here from Lu Family.

Early morning next day, Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng each carried a bowl of porridge in one of their hands, and some pastries in the other hand, and both squatted in front of the General's Residency.

A short while later, a horrible scream, like a cuckoo was crying its blood out, suddenly came out from inner courtyard of the Mayor's Mansion, "My bed, my bed, my big golden bed! Ahhhhh, who is the bastard that stole all my money?"

Soon, screams and roars started to resound from the chaotic inner courtyard.

"Somebody hurry! Go get the doctor and bring him here, Mayor is spitting blood and has fainted!"

Chapter 25 – Rush In

"Poor fellow!"

Looking at the Mayor's Mansion, which was a mess right now, Lu Chengfeng breathed out a long sigh of relief, then he stuck his tongue out and licked some porridge from the bowl. The way he behaved now was no different with those townspeople on the street, making people wonder if he was really a young master from an influential family? With a smile on his face, he narrowed his eyes to hide the exultation over the sorrows of Yi Yan.

Wu Qi did the same with his bowl of porridge, then breathed out a sigh of satisfaction. The nutrients in this world were marvelous. The rice used to cook the porridge was so fragrant and soft, it was the best porridge Wu Qi had ever eaten. After finishing a bowl full of porridge, Wu Qi felt warmth in his stomach, and the fragrance of the rice seemed to emit from his pores. Yes, the food here is very satisfying!

"Karma is a bitch."

Pressing on his tightly bundled right shoulder, Wu Qi took a deep breath and said.

"When Yi Xing signaled his right-hand man to provoke us, he should have known this would happen!"

"Obviously, they are our enemies, and not our friends. To deal with enemies, we must be ruthless. We have to hit them at their weak spot. If

someone likes pretty girls, then we will let a group of ugly guys surrounding him. If he like handsome men, then we will arrange for them to be accompanied by a group of the ugliest women at all times."

Lu Chengfeng tilted his head and stared at Wu Qi thoughtfully, then asked, "So, how about dealing with Yi Yan, a man who likes his money so much?"

Wu QI smiled reservedly, "Then, of course, we need to follow Heaven's decree and take away all of his money! With that, his mind will be disturbed. When he can't stay calm, no one can be in charge, and that will be our time, we can do whatever we want and lay our roots deep in Little Meng City!"

Staring back at the chaotic Mayor's Mansion, which was like a bee hive that had caught fire, Lu Chengfeng bared his teeth, nodded his head, and agreed. Yi Yan and his three siblings had their mind confused like entangled hemp now. They were sad and scared. Now was the best time for Lu Chengfeng to do something in Little Meng City, as they simply weren't in the mood to pick on him now.

Lu Chengfeng sat down and began to think, trying to figure out what he should do during this period where Yi Yan and all the others were mentally unstable.

It was clear that Yi Yan and his siblings did not have good attitudes toward Lu Chengfeng's arrival. Little Meng City was their territory. Now that Lu Chengfeng was here, he had ruined their money making scheme. Also, if not because their money was stolen and thus being mentally disturbed, they would have protested to Lu Chengfeng's decision in reforming the City Guards.

Luckily someone had stolen all their money.

Wu Qi stood up from where he was, then slowly strolled back into General Residency with the bowl in his hand. Lu Chengfeng gladly stared at his back, feeling lucky that this guy was his chief right-hand man. It was so fortunate that he had recruited him. But, was he the one who stolen Yi Yan and his siblings money in the first place?

The Mayor's Mansion was chaotic till noon. After Wu Qi had settled a few military tasks for Lu Chengfeng in the General's Office, he could still hear the noise and crying coming from the Mayor's Mansion. Especially the howling of fatty Yi Yan. It was so loud, strong, and penetrating, it could be heard not only within the Mayor's Mansion, but even half of Little Meng City couldn hear his cries.

But, no matter how sad Yi Yan and his siblings were, Wu Qi would not care in the slightest.

Early in the morning, Zhang Hu lead four thousand City Guards and left the city, they were going to station themselves in Meng Village, replacing the few hundred elite soldiers from the third battalion, which would be sent back to Little Meng City.

The third battalion of the Heavenly Group. It was the last elite army left by previous General of Little Meng City. Captain Hu, who was leading the third battalion, clearly didn't belong to Yi Yan's gang, actually he always went against their order, therefore, when Lu Chengfeng was assigned as the new General, Yi Yan, scared that this Captain Hu would get along with Lu Chengfeng, decided to send him out to Meng Village.

According to Yi Yan's plan, it would be great if captain Hu and all the soldiers of the third battalion got themselves killed in Meng Village. After all, there were endless barbarians within the Meng Mountains, and the casualties of the third battalion would be high, so when they were all dead, Yi Yan would be able to have peace of mind.

Wu Qi would never allow an elite army, especially an army who didn't belong to Yi Yan's gang, to be cast away so easily, also, Wu Qi needed more manpower badly.

The primary purpose of sending out two thousand City Guards to Meng Village was to train these soldiers. The ideal situation would be that these soldiers had to deal with barbarian attacks daily, keeping them constantly fighting with barbarians would be the best and fastest training method. Although the casualties would be high, there were many brave and ruthless villagers in Meng Village, which could always fill up the open slots in the army.

All eight thousand City Guards of Little Meng City would take turns, in groups of two thousand, being stationed in Meng Village each month. If those barbarians didn't attack Meng Village, these City Guards would switch into aggressive mode and actively search for barbarians.

As the Recruitment Officer of Little Meng City, Zhang Hu brought with him an official letter from Lu Chengfeng, so he could recruit three hundred young men to join as the personal guards for the General's Office. In Wu Qi's opinion, these humble and simple, but strong and ruthless villagers of Meng Village were the perfect candidates for personal guards. They had nothing to do with the Mayor's Mansion and, as long as Lu Chengfeng treated them well, they had no problem in

showing their loyalty.

Taking away three hundred young men from Meng Village would reduce the defensive strength of Meng Village, but with four thousand City Guards stationed in Meng Village, the departure of these three hundred young men became nothing.

Quickly building up a team of loyal personal guards and increasing the combat strength of the City Guards. Wu Qi's suggestion served for these two purposes, and immediately got praise from Lu Chengfeng and Zhang Hu.

Besides sending Zhang Hu and the City Guards to Meng Village, Wu Qi also sent someone to recruit new soldiers in Little Meng City. In his mind, eight thousand City Guards was not enough at all. In order for Lu Chengfeng to set deep roots in Little Meng City, he needed to expand the army. After all, they had the money from Yi Yan's huge golden bed, they can have an army of twenty thousand soldiers without any problems. They had enough weapons and armor as well.

After some restless hours in the morning, Wu Qi finally settled all these military tasks, then he saw Laohei rush into the main hall of General Office.

The villagers from Meng Village had come to the Barbarian Office with their push carts, and gotten their twenty thousand coins of reward from the barbarian heads.

These villagers knew Zhang Hu had joined the new General, therefore, they asked Laohei to pass the other half of the money to Zhang Hu and

his men. After purchaseing some hemp cloth, salts, hard liquors, and other stuff, these villagers started their journey back to Meng Village happily.

But, Laohei had some problems. The money that Barbarian Office gave to these villagers, was from the military fund of City Guards. Under the management of Yi Yan, the coffer for military could make rats die of starvation, without including half of the money the villagers gave to Zhang Hu, the ten thousand coins reward those villagers took had used up all the military fund.

Laohei was frowning and standing in the main hall of General Office, he told Lu Chengfeng worriedly, "The reward was offered by the Mayor's Mansion. One hundred coins for a barbarian's head. By law, this money was paid from Barbarian Office, and we should get the money back from Little Meng City."

Lu Chengfeng sat comfortably behind his table and was astonished, asking, "According to the rules, you should go and ask for money from the Bursary Office of Little Meng City, right?"

Laohei let out an angry humph, stamped his feet, and said, "The Bursary Officer of Mayor Mansion told me, without the order from the Mayor himself, no one is allowing to touch a single coin in the city's coffer!"

Lu Chengfeng groaned, then, with big steps, Wu Qi walked up to Laohei, grabbing the piece of paper signed by Laohei as the Barbarian Officer. On top of the paper it clearly stated that the villagers of Meng Village had submitted a total of 1975 barbarian heads, and the General Office had paid them with 197,500 coins. All the money was paid first

from the military fund of the City Guards, and later would be paid back by the Bursary Office of Little Meng City.

"They didn't pay? Xiaohei, go and get two thousand brave soldiers who can fight for money. Let them follow us and meet that Bursary Officer of the Mayor's Mansion!"

Xiaohei answered excitedly, then took a glimpse at Lu Chengfeng and saw the smile on his face. Without any hesitation, Xiaohei turned around and ran out of the hall.

Fifteen minutes later, Xiaohei had brought two thousand soldiers from the City Guard's camp, running quickly into the Mayor's Mansion. Wu Qi didn't say anything to these soldiers, he just showed them the token from Lu Chengfeng, and the whole army started to march in the direction of the Bursary Office.

According to the governmental system of the Lu Kingdom, the Mayor and his four assistant were assigned with a Bursary Officer. Their job was a combination of finance and bookkeeping, which Wu Qi was pretty familiar with. The General had a Bursary Officer, whose job was to handle military funds and equipment. The Director of Records had his own Bursary Officer, who was in charge of all the salaries and the office expenses of every single officer. the Bursary Officers under the Director of Internal Affairs and Security had similar jobs.

As for the Bursary Officer who was reporting directly to Mayor, he was responsible for all the finances and taxes related to Little Meng City, and in charge of distributing funds to all four Bursary Officers. Therefore, the responsibility and power of the Bursary Officer in the Mayor's Mansion was huge. It could only be assigned to someone who was close to Mayor

himself.

The current Bursary Officer of Little Meng City was a servant who grown up together with Yi Yan. His name was Yi San Er(易三儿)[1]. Since he had become a government officer, he thought his name was not manly enough, so he asked Yi Yan to give him a new name, hence he became Yi Shan (易山)[2].

Although his name was Yi Shan, he didn't look like a mountain. Yi Shan was a skinny and short guy, the total opposite of his master, Yi Yan. He had a triangle-shaped face, triangle-shaped eyes, two separated mustaches underneath his nose, all of which gave him the impression of a mean and cunning man.

When Wu Qi brought the big group of soldiers and came to the Bursary Office within the Mayor's Mansion, Yi Shan was standing right in front of it with his eyes rolling, as if he was calculating and planning something. Two hundred Mayor Mansion Guards were lining up, guarding the Bursary Office, gaving the place a touch of majesty and aggressiveness.

The outer wall of coffer room was made from stone slabs, and the inside was covered with a half inch steel plating, extremely strong. The main door of it was made from black iron, a foot-thick. Even if someone used some heavy weapon and try to break it, it would last for a long time. Two totems were carved on the door, one the left was 'Tao Tie'[3] and on the right was 'Pi Xiu'[4]. Both were greedy legendary beasts who only consumed but never excreted. They represented endless wealth.

Yi Shan was startled when he saw Wu Qi rushing in with so many soldiers. His tongue was swollen with terror, and he pointed at Wu Qi and shouted, "You, you, you! The guy whose name is Wu Qi! Do you know

what place is this? You, if you dare to mess with me here, even your young master can't save you!"

The coffer room was a restricted area. If Wu Qi really messed around here, he would be sentenced to a serious punishment.

Wu Qi holds the paper signed by Laohei and walked in front of Yi Shan, without saying anything he started to slap Yi Shan.

After a few rounds of slapping sounds, Yi Shan was bleeding from his lips and almost fainted.

Slamming the paper issued by Laohei onto Yi Shan's face, Wu Qi snapped, "Give me the money, also, issue another ten thousand coins for City Guards as military fund, or else, me, Wu Qi will tear you apart today!"

Without wasting any time for Yi Shan to respond, Wu Qi kicked on his stomach forcefully and sent him flying away, slamming into the door of the coffer room.

When those guards outside of coffer room saw this, they stormed in and tried to catch Wu Qi, but Wu Qi just waved his hand and shouted, "Beat them! I'll be responsible for those that die!"

There was plenty of empty space in front of the coffer room. When those two thousand soldiers brought by Xiaohei heard the command, they cried out loud and charged at the guards of the coffer room.

The two hundred poor guards of the coffer room. In an instant, the

room was flooded by soldiers who numbered ten times their own number.

Notes:

[1] Yi San Er 易三儿 – Yi is the family name, and San Er means ‘the third’

[2] Yi San – 易山 – Yi is the family name, San here is mountain, which sounds mightier.

[3] Tao Tie - 饕餮 – The legendary ferocious beast, fifth son of the Dragon King.

[4] Pi Xiu - 貔貅 – The legendary beast which having the head of a dragon and lion’s body, often with hoofs, wings and tail.

Chapter 26 – Steal Again

With a powerful kick onto his chest, Wu Qi almost broke Yi Shang's ribs into pieces.

Gazing at Yi Shan from above, Wu Qi spoke with a stern tone, "I'm here with an official military consignment sheet. If you don't give me money, then you're delaying military tasks. Do you know what the punishment for delaying military tasks in the Lu Kingdom is? Whatever. If I kill you now, I think no one would say anything, right?"

Yi Shan looked around the room with a frightened gaze. all two hundred guards had been knocked to the floor. Wu Qi's soldiers numbered ten times the amount of coffer guards, also, these soldiers never showed any mercy when attacking, therefore, all of these guards were seriously injured. A few of them were even spitting blood and falling into comas. If they were not provided with medical treatment, someone might die soon.

Gazed at Wu Qi with look full of hatred, Yi Shan said, in an insidious tone, "Wu Qi, I'll give the money to you! I'll allocate it to you today! But, don't better not forget that you injured me today. I'm the most loyal subordinate of the Mayor. I swear I won't let this matter go easily!"

Staring back at Yi Shan's twisted triangle-shaped face, Wu Qi felt annoyed, "So, you are forcing me to kill you right now?"

Wu Qi drew out the dagger which Aher had used to injure his shoulder a few days ago. This is a lower tier magical weapon, totally different from ordinary weapons. Its edges were reflecting a bright shining light and

emitting a chill that made anyone nearby feel cold. Yi Shan, feeling this chill, can't help but let out a sneeze.

Simply waving his hand, a wisp of hair was cut down by Wu Qi, and on top of Yi Shan's head, a coin size piece of scalp had been removed. Blood spilled from the wound. Wu Qi placed his palm on the wound, getting some blood and smearing it on Yi Shan's face.

"Here. Smell it. Taste it. It is your own blood. I don;t think you have ever smelled or tasted your own blood, right?"

On Wu Qi's face was a bright, friendly smile. No one would be able to tell he was trying to kill someone. But, Yi Shan had started to tremble. He was like a poor little lamb who was being pressed on the ground by a fierce tiger. He felt death was at his doorstep.

"I give up! I'll give you the money! It was only 197,500 coins. That's just one-year of military funds for the City Guards. I'll give it all to you now!"

Yi Shan was frightened, scared, and he twisted and struggled madly, screaming and yelling.

Wu Qi took a few steps back, nodding his head while let out a friendly laugh, "How nice would it be if you had been like this when I was here just now? Do we really need to turn this into something so bloody? Officer Yi, actually, I hate to use violence!" Breathing out a deep sigh, Wu Qi pointed at his head and smiled, "Actually, there are many things we can solve with this, we don't need to be violent, what do you think?"

Yi Shan gazed at Wu Qi insidiously, clenching his teeth tightly and walking to the door of coffer room. He started to work with a complicated puzzle on the face of the door. It was an 18 x 18 stars' chart, and unless it was arranged according to the correct order and the star chart was restored, the door wouldn't open.

Wu Qi nodded his head silently. The design of the door was sophisticated, which means this world had some advanced production capabilities.

While working with the puzzle, Yi Shan was grinding his teeth. His master had suffered extremely bad luck the past few days, and all his personal wealth was stolen. This had put his servants and subordinates in a state of anxiety. Therefore, when Laohei came to him with an official document, asking him to allocate the funds, he purposely spurned Laohei so he could teach Lu Chengfeng a lesson on behalf of his master.

But, for god's sake, where did this freak come from? Wu Qi actually brought a team of City Guards and attacked the coffer room! Just because he wanted to get the reward money for some barbarian heads. Did he have to go so far? Yi Shan knew there were not much money left in coffer room because all the military funds had been used up, due to corruption, but Wu Qi's way of asking money was really too awful. He only wanted such a small amount of money, so did he really need to torture Yi Shan?

Staring at the black, huge footprint on his chest, Yi Shan had decided that later, when Yi Yan's mood had calmed down, he would definitely make a serious official complaint toward Wu Qi. If Wu Qi did not die, how could he vent his anger?

As the Bursary Officer of Little Meng City, he was sitting high above others and was in control of the finances of the city. Who would dare to show him even the slightest bit of disrespect? But, this Wu Qi actually dared to beat him, dared to make him bleed, dared to step on his chest and scold him!

The sound of a mechanism rapidly moving could be heard and the door to coffer room opened up slowly. As it opened, a cold breeze came out and swept across those who stood in front of it.

Yi Shan turned around and gazed at Wu Qi over his shoulder. He snapped, “Bring few of your men and take all your money away! Let me make this clear, all the money in the coffer room was recorded precisely. Also, 90% of them are the offerings that will be sent to the Capital in the coming months. If any one of those go missing, you will find out that such things generally end with the one at fault losing their head.

Wu Qi would never fall into this trap, he just stood in front of coffer room, smiling and staring at Yi Shan, “No, no, the coffer room is a restricted area and no outsider is allowed to go in. Official Yi, please get your own men and bring out all 197,500 coins and one year of military funds for the City Guards. After that, we’ll leave immediately!”

Yi Shan was so angry his eyes almost popped out of his skull and he wanted to curse Wu Qi’s mother aloud. But, he dared not to curse, as he was still bleeding from the top of his head! Gazing at Wu Qi in anger, Yi Shan could only curse him silently, but at the same time, he felt surprised at Wu Qi’s caution.

Screaming with his high pitch tone, he summoned dozens of boys who worked in the Bursary Office, Yi Shan brought them into the coffer room.

After some time, they had brought out all the money Wu Qi requested in push carts made from metal. 197,500 coins, which had filled up twenty big chests, and one-years military funds for the City Guards, which was five hundred boxes of silver coins.

There were, in total, eight thousand City Guards in Little Meng City, none of which were official soldiers. According to the years they had spent in the army and their rank, they were paid from one to three silver coins a month. As for those who were ranked lieutenant and above, their salary were from ten to a hundred silver coins. It would require twenty thousand silver coins per year just to pay the salaries. If one included the wear and tear of the military equipment, and the living expenses for those footmen and steeds, the total expenses for the army in a year would be one hundred gold coins.

Wu Qi didn't waste any breath on Yi Shan. The reason he brought these two thousand soldiers was for this. With a command, all the money was removed from push carts by the soldiers. After waiting for all his men to leave, only then did Wu Qi ink down on the issued document with a token of the General's Office, then he held his fists out and bowed to Yi Shan, biding him goodbye and leaving.

Yi Shan stared at Wu Qi's back with an insidious look, cursed silently, "I can't wait for the thief to visit the General's Office coffers and steal everything from it, and then I'll witness how are you guys are going to die because of losing military funds!"

After wishing numerous curses on Wu Qi, Yi Shan locked the coffer room door hurriedly and rushed to the backyard of the Mayor Mansion. Yi Yan was still immersed in the sadness, suffering from the huge blow of losing the last bit of his money, he was currently laying on a bed and drinking medicinal soup. Yi Xing, Yi De, and Yi Cu were all staying by his

bedside and taking care of him, so who would have the energy to handle all the matters within Little Meng City?

Currently, Yi Yan had gone into a hysteric state, he became easily pissed off by anything, and he would order someone to drag those servants or guards who he didn't like out from his room and have them cruelly beaten. Therefore, screams of begging for forgiveness kept coming out from the Mayor's Mansion all day long.

At midnight, Wu Qi, who had spent a restless day assisting Lu Chengfeng, was striking again. This time, he was heading to the coffer room of Little Meng City.

The last few missions only created some disturbance in Yi Yan and his sibling's mind, so they wouldn't have the time or mood to find trouble with Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng. But this time, Wu Qi was going to give Yi Yan and his siblings a heavy blow – There were offerings stored in coffer room that were about to be sent to the Capital. Each year, Little Meng City had to pay a huge amount of money and treasures to the Lu Kingdom? So, what would be the punishment if these offerings were stolen?

Messing around with Yi Yan, who was just a good for nothing son of a rich family, was meaningless. By upsetting, frightening, and imposing fear in their minds for few days, then killing them with a single blow, he would save himself much trouble in the future.

Even the weather was on Wu Qi's side tonight, as thick gray clouds were covering the sky and it was drizzling. The air was filled with moisture, causing fog to start appearing everywhere, which reduced vision down to a few feet.

Under such a perfect weather, and with the help of his Innate Water Energy Shift, Wu Qi had his body covered with faded water vapor and was dashing through the night like a phantom.

There was water vapor everywhere, and the innate water energy had started to spin extremely fast in Wu Qi's arms, and started flowing into all the other veins within his body. The refreshing sensation squeezed through Wu Qi's body through all his pores, making Wu Qi feel as if his energy was slowly rising. Suddenly, he learned a trick in cultivating with Seven Foundation Establishment. By cultivating in the place rich with the respective elemental energy, his cultivation speed would double.

To cultivate with the Source of Water Chapter, he may need to find a lake or river and soak himself within it.

Moving swiftly like a phantom, Wu Qi landed on the flat rooftop of the coffer room. Sneakily walked to the edge of the roof, Wu Qi saw outside of the coffer room, where there were rows of fire torches which made the place as bright as day. A few hundred guards were walking around and looking around alertly.

Sneering silently, Wu Qi walked back to the center of the roof and then took out the lower tier magical dagger, carefully injecting a thread of energy into it.

A faded bloody red light shined from the dagger, then Wu Qi used it to cut down three stone slabs into the roof, exposing the thick metal plate underneath. An ordinary thief would have to return empty handed when they met this metal plate, but in Wu Qi's mind, it just took him a little

longer time to cut a hole on it. A lower tier magical weapon truly worth its value, its was more powerful than Lu Chengfeng's dagger, and he was able to use it to cut the metal plate like he was cutting through some soft dirt.

"Good stuff!"

While being amazed by the huge difference between a magical weapon and an ordinary weapon, Wu Qi removed the cutout metal plates to his side, soon he had made a meter-wide hole in the metal plate. Underneath the metal plate, the man who built this coffer room had even installed three layers of green steel wire mesh.

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes, a bright light started to glow within. These three layers of green steel wire mesh were not as simple as they looked, there were few tiny threads of wire linked outside the coffer room to some unknown places. It was not difficult to imagine where these tiny threads of wires linked to, there must be some bells or alerting devices hooked at the end of these wires, once they were triggered, it would alarm the whole Mayor Mansion.

But, in Wu Qi's eye, this kind of anti-burglar mechanism was too rough. With the deep knowledge of secret traps and mechanisms from Le Xiao Bai, Wu Qi easily solved the threat of these wires, cutting himself through the three layers of wire mesh.

Jumping into the coffer room like a slippery fish, Wu Qi started to rub his hands excitedly.

Different from the fatty and his siblings' hidden treasures, there was not

much gold, silver, or jewelry within the coffer room,. Most of the items stored here were all sorts of rare stuff from the mountain and huge piles of materials. All kind of rare beasts' leathers, their bones, horns, and also some rare and precious herbs, which were being kept within boxes made from jade or sandalwood. They were all the expensive items produced from Meng mountain. In the capital of the Lu Kingdom, these items could be sold for a huge amount of money.

There were even some precious herbs which he had seen in the Scroll of Stealing. They were considered to be lower tier magical medicines and provided great benefits to cultivators. These herbs were getting their special attention as well, as they were stored either in warm jade or cold jade boxes.

Taking a quick tour in the coffer room, suddenly, Wu Qi saw something that made his heart start pounding quickly!

There were soul stones in Meng Mountain? Wu Qi found two thousand soul stones in each the five elements, and they were all premium quality! There was total of twenty-seven hundred water soul stones, and each of them was emitting a watery aura that made Wu Qi feel extremely comfortable.

Besides the soul stones, Wu Qi also discovered many metal materials that could be used by cultivators, although the quantity was not great, it was more than enough for him.

Breathing out a long sigh, Wu Qi raised his head and shook with mirth. So many treasures, this was too much! This was such a painful happiness!

Rolled up his sleeves, Wu Qi clenched his teeth tight and started about his business.

Chapter 27 - Impeach

Early the next morning the fog was still hovering around and it was drizzling. Wu Qi, with a pale face, was sitting in front of the General's Office, popping his head out sneakily and staring in the direction of the Mayor's Mansion. In his hand was the same porridge bowl and pastries, an odd smile was on his face.

Drinking the porridge one mouthful at a time and munching on the pastry slowly, those guards and servants passing by the Mayor's Mansion were used seeing him like this, therefore, no one payed him any attention. At most, some servants from the Yi Family would scold him, treating him like a villager who didn't know any manners, and who couldn't even sit down properly when having his breakfast. Also, it seemed he had taught Lu Chengfeng the same bad manners.

The breeze brought carried with it the aroma of pine wood. Lu Chengfeng, holding a porridge bowl in one hand and had a pastry in his mouth, slowly strolled up to stand beside Wu Qi, then he sat on the door sill.

Popping his head and took a few glimpses at the Mayor Mansion, Lu Chengfeng whispered to Wu Qi, "What's the show today?"

Wu Qi took a sip of porridge and, with some porridge in his mouth, murmured, "How would I know? I am just used to sitting here."

Right after his words, they immediately saw few coffer room guards

running madly with pale faces. These men looked like they had been haunted by ghosts, not even watching where they were running. As a result, when they came to a set of stairs, these men slipped at the same time, slamming onto the ground.

These guards cried out in pain, rolling and crawling on the steps for a short distance, then they stood up again and started running madly toward the Mayor's Mansion. The leading guard let out a loud scream, his voice trembling like a string that had been pulled tight, making an ear-splitting noise.

"Young master! Young master! We were robbed! We were robbed! The coffer room was robbed! All the most valuable items among the offerings have been stolen! Soul stones, herbs, natural materials, and those treasures you gathered for a few princes and marquis! They have all been stolen!"

Hearing the unfortunate news, those guards who were standing in front of Mayor Mansion couldn't standing still anymore, they sat down on the floor instantly while the weapon on their waist hit on the ground, making some subtle noise. The loud screams and howling, as if someone had just died, resounded within the Mayo's Mansion. The few hundred guards of the Mayor's Mansion had spread this bad news everywhere.

Each year, Little Meng City had to send a large quantity of gold, silver, and all sorts of treasures to the Lu Kingdom as a tribute. This was the biggest reason for Little Meng City existence. Dozens of marquises and princes in the Lu Kingdom had their own interests inLittle Meng City. Usually, they would purchase all sort of treasures through the Mayor of Little Meng City.

The offerings and treasures that had been gathered all these years had been stolen. This hit the most vulnerable spot of Yi Yan.

If Little Meng City couldn't send gold, silver, and treasures to the Lu Kingdom, the government wouldn't mind appointing a new Mayor. Losing all the treasures those marquises and princes had purchased for a huge sum of money, those high ranking men wouldn't mind crushing Yi Yan and his siblings into tiny bits.

Hopeless and miserable howling burst out from the backyard of the Mayor's Mansion. That was the howling of Yi Yan, Yi Xing, Yi De, and Yi Cu, "Oh Heaven, oh Earth, what sin have we done? Which deity or ghost have we offended? Why do you want to punish us in such a way?"

Although their personal wealth was stolen, which was a painful experience for them, as long as they were still the government officials they could get all the money back by squeezing people for a few years. But when those offerings and treasures, which had been gathered all these years, were stolen, putting aside if these four brothers can still maintain their jobs, first they need to worry about keeping their lives!

A series of hasty sounding steps came from the direction of the Mayor's Mansion. Yi Yan, who was wearing nothing more than underpants and thus exposing his pale white fat, sprinted out from his backyard. Following behind of him were his three siblings, with their clothes in a messy state. They brought with them a group of guards and rushed in the direction of the coffer room.

With an extremely pale complexion on his face, Yi Yan kept spitting blood while he was running madly. The blood had smeared all over his pale chest, making him look really terrifying. Blood can be seen dripping

down Yi Xing and the other two sibling's lips too. They were breathing rapidly with their mouths open like a drowning dog.

"Hurry, hurry! Go and check what had been stolen!" While running in such a disorderly manner, Yi Yan kept yelling at his men.

Wu Qi shook his head, licking up the rest of the leftover porridge in the bowl. He knew what he had done yesterday. Wu Qi had spent fifteen pieces of lower tier water stone to replenish his energy. He kept pumping out his energy at the maximum level in order to increase his speed and strength. After spending two and a half hours, he had finally stolen everything that he could move in the coffer room.

There were too many things in the coffer room, and Wu Qi could only choose to steal the most valuable items. Besides that, he also stole all the gold and the majority of the silver. There were some items which he had no way to steal, and, thus, he had no choice but to destroy them. For example, those precious leather skins from all different kinds of rare beasts, they were now filled with numerous holes poked by Wu Qi with the dagger, making something worth a few hundred thousand gold coins became a piece of crap.

Because of the busy work last night, it made Wu Qi look pale today and look weak all over, but it just matches his 'seriously injured' condition.

Currently, there were two water stones underneath his armpits, and Wu Qi was constantly absorbing the energy within to replenish his lost energy. The cool and refreshing water vapor kept being absorbed by his arms, turning into waves of innate water energy and rolling through his body constantly.

However, by overusing and exhausting his energy, then replenished the losses with water stones, Wu Qi's cultivation level had increased by another 30%! Once again he had come so very close to the peak of the Houtian level. But, Wu Qi used this innate water energy to strengthen his veins again, and did not attempt to break through to the Xiantian Saint level.

Some noise of hustle and bustle came from afar. It was a group of guards carrying Yi Yan and his three siblings, who had all fainted. Obviously, the aftermath of coffer room had given Yi Yan and his siblings excessive shock, making them all spit out blood like a water fountain, and faint again.

Wu Qi gazed at those guards who were carrying Yi Yan and his siblings back messily, then casually passed his bowl to Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Chengfeng, not paying attention to his actions, grabbed Wu Qi's bowl, then he heard Wu Qi said, "Now that they lost their offerings, what will be their punishment from the Lu Kingdom?"

Raising his brows, Lu Chengfeng replied instinctively, "Best case? Removal from his office and the loss the job. Worst case? Imprisonment and being escorted back to the Capital for a hearing."

Rubbing his palms a few times, Wu Qi asked Lu Chengfeng again, "So, young master, do you have a friend or two in the Capital? You know, someone in one of those influential families in the Capital who we can provide some information about this event?"

Lu Chengfeng's eyes glow suddenly, while nodding his head, he said, "Of course I do have a few good friends, but they are all in a similar situations to myself, having awkward positions in their families."

Standing up hastily, Wu Qi sneered, "Awkward or not, I don't care. Young master, you better hurry and write a letter of impeachment about Yi Yan and his siblings, saying they are corrupt and have defied the laws, misappropriating the offerings of the Lu Kingdom. The more serious you can make their crimes sound, the better. Send the letter to the Capital as soon as possible. Also, write a letter to few of your good friends from influential families, and ask for their help in spreading this news in the Capital."

Lu Chengfeng stood up instantly with two bowls in his hand, nodding his head excitedly, "Brilliant! With this, we can get rid of them once for all, and they won't have any chance to come back. Before the assignment of new Mayor, you and I can do anything we want in Little Meng City!"

Puckered in a smile, Lu Chengfeng said with an insidious expression, "Little Meng City is a remote place, many government officials die each year. I don't think there will be anyone willing to come here of their own will, unless there are those who have nowhere else they can go and only want to make money!"

Wu Qi gazed at Lu Chengfeng and grinned, "So what is young master waiting for? Let Xiaohei bring thirty barbarian hunters together, and remember to give them more gold, silver, and jewelry. Ask those good friends of yoursr to think of a way. We need them to provide you the position of acting Mayor!"

Lu Chengfeng stared back at Wu Qi strangely, "Why not the official

Mayor position?"

Wu Qi looked at Lu Chengfeng like he was looking at an idiot, "Those siblings of young master, do you think they will allow you to be a Mayor? Acting Mayor is just a name, and with this, no one will look at you, even if you have Little Meng City completely in your pocket. But if young master becomes the official Mayor, hmm… there might be complications..."

That look had awakened Lu Chengfeng, and he slammed his head with a porridge bowl, turned around, and sprinted away.

After running a few steps, Lu Chengfeng suddenly realized something, he looked down at the two porridge bowls in his hand, turned around, and stared at Wu Qi over his shoulder with a look of depression. Didn't this guy know he was just the right-hand man? How dare he let his young master clean up his bowl?

Twitching his lips, Lu Chengfeng shouted and asked, "Wu Qi, where are you going then?"

Wu Qi placed both his hands on his back, and started strolling in the direction of a few of the Mayor's Mansion's guards happily. With a bright smile on his face, he said, "Where am I going? I am off to cook up some story and spread it around! By losing the offerings of the Lu Kingdom, those Yi brothers are going to experience a bloody journey soon. Tsk! I'll let you witness how, with just my tongue, I can blow away these few thousand guards of the Mayor's Mansion!"

Lu Chengfeng's eyes glowed again, and he felt excited and full of energy right now. He immediately shouted, "Xiaohei, Xiaohei! Come here!

Hurry!”

Using his fastest speed, Lu Chengfeng wrote an impeachment letter, then he wrote few more private letters which were filled with emotion of brotherhood. After that, he inserted these letters into separate copper pipes [1] and sealed them with wax, passing them to Xiaohei seriously. At the same time, giving him a lot of instructions on what he should do in the Capital.

Half an hour later, Xiaohei and thirty barbarian hunters were riding the fastest rides they could find in Little Meng City, leaving at the fastest speed. Contain within a leather pouch on Xiaohei’s waist, besides from the impeachment and private letters, was a thick stack of gold notes [2] exchanged from the money house [3] in Little Meng City – total of one hundred thousand pure gold coins. One hundred thousand gold coins were more than enough to buy the position of a Governor for a province, let alone a remote small city like Little Meng City.

All the money that poor fellow Yi Yan had squeezed from his people the past few years, was now all being put to good use by Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng.

Right when Lu Chengfeng was busy arranging and executing their plan, Wu Qi had come to the side of a few of the Mayor’s Mansion guards, smiling and greeting them in a friendly manner.

With a bright smile, Wu Qi held his fist out to these guards, then asked, “Brothers, are you guys the servant or guards from Yi family?”

These guards started to look at each other, then, at the same time, they

shook their heads.

When Yi Yan and his siblings came to Little Meng City, they only brought few hundred of their own guards. The current few thousand guards in the Mayor's Mansion were all recruited within the past few years.

Wu Qi nodded his head slowly, placed both of his hands on his back, and started to stroll away. While walking slowly, in a voice full of emotion, he said, "A thief broke into the coffer room and they stole all the offerings for the Lu Kingdom, I think the Mayor is going to leave soon. Brothers, you are all paid to do your work, not born to be their servant or guards, when he is gone, how are you guys going to earn a living?"

In just an hour, the news had spread across Little Meng City.

The Mayor was doomed, and, as for those guards who had been hired by him, what should they do? The Mayor Yi Yan, can't even pay their next months salary! Should they just quit and find a new job, or perhaps they should join with the new General?

Rumors abound and everyone was worried.

By this time, Xiaohei was already a hundred miles away from Little Meng City!

Notes:

[1] Copper Pipe – a small container used to contain letter

[2] Gold Notes – paper money actually, as gold and silver are heavy in

bulk, they use this as the representative of gold / silver in bulk

[3] Money House – old-style private bank, you can exchange gold / silver to notes in any branches

Chapter 28 – Night Assassin

Midnight.

Fire was spreading within the Mayor's Mansion, and the sound of crying and yelling filled the sky.

Little Meng City was now enwrapped in chaos. Many of the people in the city didn't know what had happened, and were gathering on the streets, trying to figure out what was going on. While most people were filled with worry and trepidation, Wu Qi was dancing with joy as he led the rest of the City Guards, and over two thousand over new recruits, out to maintain the order of the city, not allowing any people to stay on the street.

The chaotic scene in the Mayor's Mansion lasted for nearly fifteen minutes before the main door was finally pushed open and numerous shadowy figures sprinted out from within.

Wu Qi had stolen everything from Yi Yan and his siblings, but their servants, guards, and relatives still had some money with them, and if you put all that money together it was quite a huge sum.

Wu Qi had spread all sort of strange and odd rumors within the Mayor's Mansion, but Yi Yan and his siblings had their minds dulled by previous events, so no one came out and clarified these rumors. They even didn't send their right-hand men to supervise those guards they hired. Rumors could mess with one's decisions easily, therefore, all of the over three thousand guards within the Mayor's Mansion came to the same decision.

That night, the two thousand guards went on strike, setting fire to the Mayor's Mansion, and robbing everything owned by those people who were close to Yi Yan, and kidnapping a few hundred beautiful servant ladies from within the Mansion. Then they opened up the front door of Mayor Mansion and sneaked out into Little Meng City.

Little Meng City was a land of anarchy. There were no other cities within a few hundred miles of it, as it was the most remote place in the Lu Kingdom. If not because the Meng Mountain produced a lot of precious products, not even a stray dog would want to be here. Because of this, the only people who came here were either tradesmen who are willing to risk their lives for a profit, those rogue barbarian hunters who were dancing on the edge of death, or outlaws, who had nowhere else they could go.

Since Yi Yan and his brothers came to Little Meng City and got rich, they had hired a lot of guards to protect themselves. The strongest people in Little Meng City were actually those rogue barbarian hunters and cruel outlaws.

These men were like a pack of bloodthirsty wolves. When Yi Yan could feed them, they would put their lives on the line for him. But, when he could no longer support these people they would turn their heads and bite at him fiercely. Therefore, these guys now struck out without thinking twice. They took away all the money and women they could, and then sneaked into Little Meng City without any feeling of guilt.

Wu Qi was giving orders to the City Guards and keeping order in Little Meng City, but they only focused on the civilians and traders, avoiding any conflict with those guards who had betrayed their master. Frankly

speaking, these guards were pretty strong, and Wu Qi's soldiers had no way to defeat them. Also, there's no reason for Wu Qi to stand in their way because he was not so kind hearted to sacrifice his men for Yi Yan.

Leading a team of City Guards and patrolling along the main street, Wu Qi witnessed many of these guards, carrying big or small bags a dragging a few servant ladies, quickly crossing the street and disappearing into the dark.

The fire at the Mayor's Mansion was soaring high into the air, but no one had gone to put it out. Wu Qi could barely hear the screaming of Yi Yan and his siblings, but who would go and help them now? Just let them scream and yell.

In just a few days, Wu Qi had put the Mayor of the city into such miserable state. He really felt proud of himself.

The fire lasted for the whole night. After all, an important place like a Mayor's Mansion had to be built with fine stone. The courtyards which caught on fire were Yi Yan and his siblings' backyard. The fire had burned down all the trees and buildings within, and finally went out. Black smoke was soaring high up into sky and the air was filled with the pungent smell of ash. Cries can heard everywhere as the servants and relatives of Yi Yan brothers were howling and crying their lungs out too, complaining the loss of their money, their wives, and their prettiest servants.

After a night of rioting, more than two thousand of the guards of the Mayor's Mansion were gone. The rest of them had joined up with Lu Chengfeng.

These men didn't mess around. They stripped out of their Mayor's Mansion uniform in front of Yi Yan's men, kneeled down in front of the General's Office, and asked if they could join Lu Chenfeng as his personal guards.

Of course, Lu Chengfeng had to behave like a generous young master from an influential family. By his order, he had these few hundred Mayor's Mansion guards change into the uniform of the City Guards, grouped them into the army and assigned them to stay guard in the General's Office.

All of these guards were cultivating their inner energy, which made them stronger than ordinary soldiers. Although their loyalty might be a problem, as long as they got paid enough they could still be put to good use. A dog won't bite the hand that feeds it. The good people of Little Meng City were pretty down to earth. As long as they were paid, there was nothing to complain about on their service.

Yi Yan, who heard the news, immediately came out from his burned down Mansion, witnessing the guards, who he had hired, joining Lu Chengfeng.

Almost all the guards had betrayed him and run away. The rest turned their backs on him and switched camps. This was like receiving two powerful slaps, making Yi Yan's eyes turn green and had his layers of fat trembled. When he saw those guards changed into the black colored City Guards uniform, he couldn't hold it anymore and spit out a mouthful of blood, his eyes rolling back, and he fainted on the spot.

Wu Qi hid both of his hands in his sleeves, and smiled in joy as he watched Yi Yan vomit blood and faint. He shouted with a lifeless and

dragging voice, “The Mayor has just vomited blood and fainted again, somebody, go and get some physicians here, hurry, hurry!”

With a wave of his hand, ten bronze ‘knife coins’ [1] were thrown beside Yi Yan. The ‘kind-hearted’ Wu Qi looked at a few of the servants standing beside Yi Yan. They had pale faces as they stood there, shocked, “I thought you guys might be running out of money to hire a physician, so here, this is some of my pocket change, I presume you need it as you are out of money?”

When the half-fainted Yi Yan heard the word ‘money’, he immediately yelled toward the sky ,”My money, all my money, my moneyyyyy!”

Spiting out another mouthful of blood, Yi Yan had now completely passed out.

Those servants and followers of Yi Yan hurried and held his head up, trying to press on the middle of his upper lip, some patted on his plump face, some sprinkled water on his face, and finally they were able to wake hi, up. But, the awakened Yi Yan’s face had a dark complexion and stared blankly, the soft and delicate fat meat of him dried up suddenly, as if he had just lost a dozen liters of water in his body and become dehydrated.

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes and looked at Yi Yan, then he gazed at those servants of the Mayor’s Mansion, who were running around busily, and groaned.

That night, with a stern expression, Lu Chengfeng had set up the ‘Grand White Gold Dagger Formation’ outside of his own bedroom, with three pillars as the foundation. The formation field covered an area of three

hundred square feet, which spanned across his entire room and courtyard.

Wu Qi was squatting beside him, throwing a curious look at Lu Chengfeng, who was busying setup the formation.

The Grand White Gold Dagger Formation. Wu Qi knew this formation, as the Scroll of Stealing covered everything he needed to know, including the topic of formations. It was so advanced and complex that it was beyond imagination. In the realm of cultivation, the formation is like the alloy door of a safe vault, or those electronic locking mechanisms. They are used to protect important places and all kinds of treasures. They were also a representation of the Dao in this universe.

The Scroll of Stealing claimed that there was nothing in this world that can't be stolen. If it didn't contain knowledge of formations, how could one break these formations and steal the targeted items?

Therefore, one-third of the Scroll of Stealing was used to explained all kinds of theories about formations. Beyond those frequently used formations in the realm of cultivation, there were also extra notes on the understanding and expansions of these formations by the author himself. It simply covered everything. No matter what kind of formation you were dealing with, with the Scroll of Stealing, understanding and breaking them were as easy as breathing air. Effortless.

The Grand White Gold Dagger Formation. It was a basic metal elemental formation and, even though Wu Qi never studied the knowledge of formations specifically, he could tell the secret of it easily. Three pillars were laying in a triangular shape and there was barely visible metal energy flowing between them. A thin layer of white mist was

hovering inches above the ground, within the courtyard. That was the energy of the Grand White Gold essence gathered by the formation.

After fifteen minutes of restless hard work, Lu Chengfeng got the formation started. This basic foundation had depleted all of his energy, if Laohei didn't bring him a bowl of Human Medicine on time, Lu Chengfeng wouldn't even have had the strength to remain standing.

Throwing an examining look at the functioning formation, Wu Qi placed his hand on chin, feeling puzzled, and asked, "Is this worth the effort?"

Lu Chengfeng took a deep breath and returned the bowl to Laohei, relaxing and sitting down beside Wu Qi. He stared into the sky and, with an indifferent tone, said, "Someone will be here. Before Yi Yan is officially removed from the Mayor's post and leaves Little Meng City, we need to stay on guard like this, every single night."

Staring at Lu Chengfeng in disbelief, Wu Qi asked again, "But, who would attack us?"

Before he finished his word, he heard a sound of liquid splashing coming from outside of courtyard. Wu Qi's face darkened. He was very familiar with this sound. When his teacher, Wu Wang, was on a mission to get rid of some guards, he used a dagger and cut the throat of those guards from behind, and the sound of their blood splashing out was exactly like this.

Lu Chengfeng's body froze, then he whispered, "Someone is here, Laohei, get back into the house!"

Laohei, with a stooping shoulder, took out a black bent knife from somewhere, remaining standing beside Lu Chengfeng while his body trembled. He wanted to stay beside his young master. Wu Qi frowned and, with an extremely fast speed, grabbed the bent knife, pressed his finger on Laohei's body and making him pass out. He carried him back into Lu Chengfeng's bedroom.

Nodding in praise, Lu Chengfeng whispered while sneering, "Brother Yi Yan and I are not the same. After all, they are the sons of Yi family. Even though they are just sons of concubines, they have been followed by 'assassins' since they were young."

Wu Qi stared at Lu Chengfeng and waited for his confirmation.

Lu Chengfeng nodded his head and said, "Assassins! those who kill in the dark!"

Wu Qi stood beside Lu Chengfeng. After rubbing his palms, he wields the lower tier magical dagger in his left palm. Waving the bent knife he took from Laohei, Wu Qi spoke with a cold tone," That means, those 'assassins' of Yi Yan have finally come for us? Mm, not a surprise, so many things have happened in Little Meng City, and we are the biggest suspects!"

Lu Chengfeng twitched his lips. They were not just suspects. How could he explain the origin of that gold hiding underneath his bed? They were the real culprits behind the latest events. If not because he was the eldest son of the Lu Family, those assassins would have come for them when Yi Yan personal wealth was stolen.

“Be careful! These assassins are not so easy to deal with!” Lu Chengfeng took a deep breath, then he drew out a six-foot long soft steel sword from his waist. He swung the sword casually, a bright green light emitting out from it.

“Good weapon!” Wu Qi praised. No matter whether the material or the production technique, this sword was flawless among ordinary weapons.

A group of shadowy figures appeared on top of the wall. There were four men in black suits quietly approaching them.

Notes:

[1] Knife Coin – a knife shaped coin, the smallest unit of money.

Reference:

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Knife_money

Chapter 29 – The Formation to Kill

Inches above the ground within the courtyard, a thin, barely seen layer of Grand White Gold Essence energy was hovering around.

Night breeze passed above the rooftop, a few chimes were sounded by the passing wind.

Wu Qi's body was twisting in a very odd manner, as if he was made with water. From head to toe, all his bones and joints were vibrating at a very high frequency. His body was filled with tremendous strength, just like a tightly squeezed spring. At anytime, he could leap out and unleash a deadly strike.

About a hundred feet in front of them, four men in black were standing quietly in the shadows. It was so dark that they can barely be seen. No sound of breathing, or of hearts beating. They gave off no signs of being normal humans, as if they were four demons who had just escaped from the depths of hell, staring at Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng with a killing intent.

Suddenly, Lu Chengfeng let out a laugh and said, "Do the four of you know that, by killing me, it will be a provocation to the Lu Family? The eldest son of the Lu Family happens to be killed in Little Meng City. Even if I am not welcome in my own family, for the dignity of the family, they will go all out for revenge!"

An elusive sound came from the direction of four men in black. Wu Qi can't figure out which man was doing the talking. Apparently, these assassins had cultivated with a different kind of skill, since their behaviors

were so weird that they would send a shiver down one's spine.

"Killing you is the only way to let our master escape from all the punishments. The new General of Little Meng City revolted with his army, robbing the coffer room and wreaking havoc in the city. The Mayor, Yi Yan, took the tense situation calmly, under his command, peace finally returned. Although there were great losses in the coffer room, his orders save the day and, thus, no punishment will be done to him!"

Lu Chengfeng flung up his hands, turned to Wu Qi and smiled, "Listen to this, listen to what he just said! What did I tell you just now? Are we the biggest suspects? They simply want to kill us and put all the blame on us! But this plot is really thick, I wonder who came out with this idea?"

The voice sounded again, "It was young master Yi Yan's idea."

Pausing for a second, the voice spoke again, "That's it, enough is enough. If not because the young master himself asked us to explain this to you before killing you, we wouldn't bother to speak a work to you! Lu Chengfeng, Wu Qi, both of you must die today!"

Before the last word was said, a shadowy figure suddenly moved, producing a sharp slicing noise as it moved. before Wu Qi could see the man's movement, he had crossed more than hundred feet of distance and was merely thirty feet away from Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng.

Suddenly, the sound of metal vibrating resounded within the air, and a palm-sized, crescent-shaped dagger appeared out of nowhere. It was as thin as a silk cloth and reflected the bright light of the moon. In the blink of an eye, this dagger had approached the man, carrying a razor sharp

cold breeze with it as it tried to break into this man's body by spinning extremely fast.

A snake-shaped, one foot long dagger appeared in the left hand of the shadowy figure. It was a pitch black dagger, emitting faded dark green embers under the light of the moon. It was definitely covered with poison. With a sway of his hand, the dagger merely hit the crescent-shaped dagger before it impaled his body.

With a crystal clear clanging sound, the snake-shaped dagger split into two pieces, and the crescent-shaped dagger formed by Grand White Gold Essence energy had impaled his body while spinning fast, coming out from the other side of his body. Wu Qi could hear the sound of bones breaking and meat being chopped by the dagger. When it came out from the body, a stream of blood, mixed with tiny chunks of body tissue, shot at least a few feet away.

Judging from the path of the dagger, the man's heart should have suffered from serious injury. But, this shadowy figure didn't make any sound, he just continued his course and thrust his dagger out toward Lu Chengfeng. With a faded green light on his right hand, he grabbed out at Lu Chengfeng's neck.

Lu Chengfeng screamed out in terror, "He is not dead yet?"

Lu Chengfeng swung his soft metal sword and out splashed a bright green light. He thrust it forward with a swooshing sound. The sword hit right onto the dagger of the shadowy man and shattered it, continued its course and sliced into his neck. With a push and slice movement, Lu Chengfeng had cut the man's neck half open.

Although suffering from such severe injuries, the shadowy figure was still sprinted like a mad tiger toward Lu Chengfeng, striking out with both his hands, generating a muffled swooshing sound, one hand was striking toward Lu Chengfeng's throat, the other targeted his heart.

Three more crescent-shaped daggers appeared within Grand White Gold Dagger formation. The spinning daggers thrust toward the shadowy figure while glowing with a razor sharp light, in next second all of them had impaled into his back. One of the daggers hit right onto the man's backbone, making its way through and destroying everything. The man's backbone was broken into pieces by the strike.

Shockingly, this shadowy figure didn't even make a sound out of pain, there was only an extremely cruel look in his eyes. His attack didn't slow as both of his hands kept moving. When the palms were a few feet away from Lu Chengfeng, the powerful force made his face feel pain.

Lu Chengfeng watched helplessly as both palms approached, he didn't know what to do as he had no experience in fighting with anybody. His sword had become a mere decoration.

Wu Qi extended his hand and grabbed onto Lu Chengfeng's back, pulling him in his direction and placing Chengfeng behind his body. With a groan, he unleashed a large amount of cold energy from his palms, forming it into two whirlpools with innate water energy and weaving it into a thick barrier in front of his body.

As the palms hit the barrier, it was as if two hills had fallen into a deep lake. Wu Qi's body trembled. The best way to describe this attack was

that it was like a powerful canon, although he had unleashed layers of barriers made up by numerous whirlpools, defending himself, and weakening the force of the attack, he was still getting hit by the shocks of the attack, which made all his internal organ trembled.

"Arooo~~~"!

The sound of a wolf howling came out from the shadowy man's mouth and his body expanded, both of his palms had become as big as a cattail left fan [1]. At the center of his palms was a dark black bubble. Together with a pungent, stinking smell, they slammed forcefully toward Wu Qi. When it crashed into Wu Qi's barrier, the whirlpools merely neutralized 60% of the force before they were completely shattered. Then, their palms met.

Following a loud explosion sound, the body of the shadowy figure exploded into a million pieces, chunks of meat and blood, together with pungent smell, splattered toward Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng.

Sounds of tidal waves came out from Wu Qi's arms. With his eyes nearly popping out, Wu Qi unleashed all the strength he had.

The innate energy within both Wu Qi's arms was pushing forward, wave by wave, endlessly and rapidly. The last 40% of the energy of the shadowy man had consumed eighteen waves of Wu Qi's energy and finally came to an end. Wu Qi extended both arms sideways, circulating the innate water energy within allover his body, then he burst out a layer of water vapor, covering an area of a few feet wide around him.

Muffled wet collision sounds never stopped. The faded water vapor was

hovering around Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng, and numerous meat chunks and drops of blood were hitting on this water vapor with swooshing sound, but they can only penetrate a foot deep before being turned into mist by the water vapor.

Wu Qi raised his head up and let out a loud scream, with an extremely fast speed he took out a water stone from his sleeve, crazily absorbing the energy within to replenish his losses. After that, the water vapor retracted and flow back into the veins in his arms, finished all the action in split second, Wu Qi finally opened his mouth and spit out a stream of blood.

The counter attack of the shadowy figure before his death was too powerful, even with the innate water energy, which was good at overcoming hardness with softness, the attack still wounded Wu Qi's lung meridian, forcing him to spit out some blood. But luckily, the innate water energy was specialized in nourishing, with the replenishment from water stone, in just the time of few breathes, those injured meridians had recovered.

Breathed out a long sigh of relief, Wu Qi asked frightfully, "Who even fights like this?"

The man had his internal organs and backbone shattered and broken by the daggers of the Grand White Gold Essence Formation. His neck was cut halfway by Lu Chengfeng, and his palms had be blown apart by Wu Qi. After all this, this shadowy man still scarificed himself with a suicide explosion? Judging from all the black colored blood and the same black colored meat and bone chunks on the floor, who knows how much poison this shadowy man had in his body?

If not because of Wu Qi's miraculous skill, and his strong cultivation skill, just with this assassin alone, he would be able to kill Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng easily.

Lu Chengfeng, who was still suffering from the shock, shouted, "They are assassins, for all their lives they had been preparing themselves ready for this! Wu Qi, be extremely careful!"

While shouting angrily, Lu Chengfeng was forming some seals with his hands and pushing these seals in the direction of the three pillars. He was adjusting the power of the Grand White Gold Dagger Formation to the maximum. Before all this happened, he was tried to save the energy stones used by the formation and therefore he only set the power level to 30%. The consequence was that the shadowy man had made it all the way up to their noses and still had the ability to fight.

After witnessing the terrifying abilities of these assassins, Lu Chengfeng dared not to attempt to save energy stones. Without even having to think twice, he immediately adjusted the formation to its maximum output.

At the corner of the courtyard, three shadowy figures were hiding in the shadows and staring in their direction. After almost fifteen minutes of silence, the elusive voice spoke again, "A formation? No wonder we felt agitated when we came here. That's why we let Number Four probe you guys first. We never expected that the eldest son of the Lu Family was a cultivator!"

Lu Chengfeng just kept sneering. After experiencing what had happened just now, he had begun to feel braver, his fighting spirit was rising with each passing second. He raised the sword up high, injecting his energy into it, and making the soft sword became straight, like an

arrow.

"Since I was born, there have been countless people who tried to kill me. Hey, let see if you guys will succeed today!"

A feeling of sour hatefulness radiated from Lu Chengfeng's body. Wu Qi threw a curious look at him, and nodded his head slowly. Just a single assassin had made both of them go all out to defend themselves, and there were still three more assassins in front of them, trying to look for the best time to strike. If Lu Chengfeng didn't man up and fight for his own life, Wu Qi really had no confidence in protecting his own life.

Judging from the performance of the first assassin, Wu Qi started to doubt on the power of this Grand White Gold Dagger Formation. Of course, the complete version of this formation should have a mighty power, but Wu Qi had no confidence in Lu Chengfeng, who was a half-boiled formation practitioner.

While having some messy thoughts in his mind, the three shadowy figures leap forward at the same time, striking like poisonous snakes. Wu Qi clearly saw when these three men leap forward, and they fed themselves a red pill at the same time. The next second all of them had their energy increase by, at least, ten times.

That must be a forbidden pill, which could stimulate one's potential. With the sudden ten times increase in energy, these three assassins had decided to attack with all they had. Ten times the strength, even though Wu Qi had strengthened his veins twice, he did not dare to try and endure such a sudden energy surge. How could these ordinary assassins have the capability to withstand them?

In a split second, the three shadowy figures had entered into the Grand White Gold Dagger Formation.

More than three hundred daggers emerged from nowhere, and the thin layer of Grand White Gold Essence energy inches above ground had completely disappeared. All the energy was concentrated in these daggers. With the sound of numerous daggers thrusting forward while spinning, these daggers had locked down their targets and begun to strike.

Right at this moment, the power of this Grand White Gold Dagger Formation had increased exponentially. Comparing to the previous round of attack with just three or four daggers, its power had increased more than a hundred times.

Before Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng could attack, the three assassins, had been chopped into a million tiny pieces. A few hundred daggers continued flying around for some time, only to slowly dissolve into nothingness.

Staring at the scene in front of him, with chunks of meat and bones flying around, Wu Qi was startled. In an incredibly blunt and straightforward manner, he had finally understood how powerful a formation can be. He began to have a great deal of interest in this, and thought to himself that he should start gathering the materials required to make a formation, and he should be like Lu Chengfeng, learning this from the most basic formation.

He was merely on the first step of a thousand mile journey to becoming

a Master Thief.

Some cracking sound came from those three pillars, as the energy stones fitted on them had their energy used up and turned to ashes.

Lu Chengfeng sprinted toward the pillars while groaning and sighing. He grabbed the pillars and put them back in his bag.

“What a waste! What a waste! It is so difficult to find energy stones nowadays!”

Wu Qi gazed at the sad Lu Chengfeng, then he let out a cough.

“Young master, please tell me more about these assassins. They are simply too terrifying!”

Notes:

[1] Cattail left fan –

See the image here: http://prntscr.com/bn3cpy

Link not working!

Chapter 30 - Slaughter

The peak of the mountain was reflecting bright sunshine and stood out, in stark contrast, from the deep blue sky behind it. A muddy, winding road crossed along the foot of the mountain, and there were rarely any travelers on it.

Wearing standard armor and a custom long sword, Wu Qi was riding on a deer with a single horn on its head. He was examining the windy road beneath him. The deer was nibbling on some moss on a rock, grinding its teeth against said rock.

Maybe the moss was not delicious, but the deer snorted unhappily and whipped its long tail out and hit Doggie on his face.

(Side note: If you forgot who is Doggie, refer to Chapter 7)

Doggie wiped his nose. He was wearing the same standard armor of the City Guards, and wore a smile on his face. He pushed the deer tail away, then extended his hand and stroked a twelve-foot-tall battle axe that was sitting beside him. The head of the axe was almost three feet in length. Without even needing to swing it, one can already tell how much damage this axe could cause.

One month ago, after the night of the assassin incident, Yi Yan and his brothers had stopped all their dirty tricks completely. They began to party every night, in an almost hysterical condition, playing and torturing their servant ladies and maids wantonly, as if they wanted to live their luxurious and extravagant lives for the few days they still could.

Within a month, Zhang Hu had brought back all the soldiers of the third battalion from Meng Village. Under the constant persuasion of Lu Chengfeng, Lieutenant Hu Wei, who was the commanding officer of the third battalion, joined him as his third right-hand man. Those five hundred elite soldiers under him had become Lu Chengfeng's personal guards.

Not just them, Zhang Hu had also brought back six hundred strong young men from Meng Village, including Doggie. All of them were endurance filled men who could fight. With the stationed four thousand soldiers from Little Meng City, together with a huge amount of money and food support sent by Wu Qi, Meng Village didn't need so many strong young men to protect their village, therefore, the elders of Meng Village had wisely agreed to send the six hundred strongest young villagers to Little Meng City.

No matter how hard they worked in Meng Village, they were still just a villager. By joining Lu Chengfeng and working in Little Meng City, these villagers might get themselves a brighter future. Those elders in Meng Village had wise minds, and their decision was wise too. These six hundred strong young men had been grouped into Lu Chengfeng's personal guard on the day they arrived, besides this, Lu Chengfeng also took out a book, which was a secret skill of the Lu Family – 'Mighty Ox Strength' and gave it to these men from Meng Village.

One month later, the punishments for Yi Yan and his brothers, that had been made by the King of the Lu Kingdom, arrived in Little Meng City. Corruption and abuse of the law, failure to perform their duties, etc.. Yi Yan and his brothers had been sentenced with many offences, and Yi Yan himself had been removed from the position of Mayor, and Lu Chengfeng was appointed as the acting Mayor.

Everything ran according to Wu Qi's plan, except the punishments for Yi Yan brothers. The attitude of King Lu made Wu Qi puzzled. The Yi brothers didn't suffer from any further punishments, and they were only ordered to return to the Yi Family and shut themselves up to ponder over their own mistakes. Obviously, the Yi Family had used their connections to influence the decisions of their punishments. In the end, decides from losing their jobs, they required to be held responsible for any other matters.

"A snake will bite the hand of he who spared its life, the Yi brothers must die!"

Wu Qi sat firmly on the single horn deer, narrowing his eyes and looked far off in the direction of Little Meng City. This place was three hundred miles away from Little Meng City, and it was the only road that lead to Little Meng City. If Yi Yan and his men wanted to return to Ruyang, this was the only road they could use.

Doggie, with the same silly smile on his face, stroked the big axe again, then he slammed on Wu Qi's shoulder with his hand and asked, "Big brother, when will the men you want to kill arrive?"

Wu Qi remained silent and thought for a while, then he nodded his head slowly and said, "Maybe another hour? They had too many coaches, and with so many women and other family members, plus the current road conditions, they won't be reaching here for a while."

Patted on Doggie's shoulder, Wu Qi frowned and said, "Doggie, didn't big brother Zhang Hu mentioned that we only want adults when he was

at Meng Village? Why did you come back with him?"

Doggie's smile suddenly disappeared, and, with a deep voice, he said, "My dad died, I need to support my mom and my younger siblings. By coming to Little Meng City, the acting Mayor will pay me well, also, I can practice with the 'Mighty Ox Strength' skill, that the young master gave us. This is so much more powerful than the inherited skill of Meng Village, why shouldn't I come here?"

Clenching his fists tight on the axe, Doggie raised his head up proudly and stared at a passing cloud. with a smile, he said, "All the uncles in the village told me, women outside of Meng Village are tastier! I want to earn a lot of money, then I'll buy few women from outside of the mountain and bring them back to Meng Village. I want to have children, a lot of my own children!"

Wu Qi was stunned by what he heard. Doggie's ambitious dream had made him recalled Le Xiaobai. There was once when Le Xiaobai stood in front of the famous red light district in Amsterdam, Netherland, and he raised up his head up and shouted, "Give me women, I want a lot of women!"

Breathed out a long sigh, Wu Qi spoke helplessly, "Your name, Doggie, is an awful name, let me give you a new name? ... How about Meng Xiaobai?"

Doggie nodded his head indifferently, he couldn't tell if the name was good or bad, he replied straight forward, "Meng Xiaobai? Sounds good, so I'm Meng Xiaobai from now on!" He turned around, told the group of muscular men behind happily, "Folks, from now on I'm Meng Xiaobai, this is the name big brother Wu Qi gave!"

These muscular men were separated up into smaller groups of ten, and they were drinking some hard liquor. When they heard what Meng Xiaobai said, all of them raised their wine sacks high up and cheered. With extreme excitement, these men finished all the liquor in their wine sacks and, in an instant, their faces turned red and their necks became thicker, the veins on them had expanded visibly.

These tough guys were like a pack of mad bulls. With just a command from Wu Qi, they would sprint forward and ripped everything apart.

Mighty Ox Strength, the secret skill from the Lu Family. It was a perfect match for these tough and simple men from Meng Village. After just practicing it for twenty days, these men had become fearless, like those mad bulls, ready to strike on a weaving red cloth.

Hu Wei and his five hundred elite soldiers from the third battalion were waiting quietly in the woods beside them, all of them remained silent, like a hill, and not a single movement could be scene. Not a single one of them made a sound. Even the Raptors they were riding on were standing firm and quiet, occasionally swinging their tails to chase away some small bugs.

Comparing to the men from Meng Village, who were like the hot boiling lava, the third battalion was like a silent iceberg, silent but deadly.

A parade of coaches and horses had appeared at the end of the road. There were more than a hundred coaches in this parade, and three hundred cavalry were riding along beside them. The snake-like parade was moving slowly in Wu Qi's direction. The Yi brothers had finally come.

Within this parade, aside from all the relatives, servants, and guards of the Yi family, there was also an emissary from the Capital of the Lu Kingdom, who was here to announce the punishment, and a team of more than a hundred people from the Yi Family were following along as well. These Yi Family men came from Ruyang purposely to fetch and escort the Yi brothers back home.

"I wonder, within these people, will there be any assassins?" Wu Qi stared at the parade, then he gave a signal with a hand gesture.

A man from Meng Village sprinted into the woods, then he made a sharp and ear-splitting whistle that carried a strange tone. In next second, a continuous whistling sound came from the woods afar, and the whistle sound kept passing farther and farther until it could be heard in a narrow valley along the road.

When Yi Yan's parade was nearing the valley, a strange howl suddenly came out from it. In an instant, numerous razor sharp arrows had shot out from the valley toward the Yi Family's parade.

Together with the weird howling and cheering sound, more than two thousand barbarians were dancing and hopping around in joy, holding all kinds of weapons in their hands, and rushed out from the valley. Behind these barbarian strikers, a few hundred barbarians kept shooting arrows with the bows in their hands, sending those poisonous arrows into the sky in front of them.

Although the villagers of Meng Village had a deep-seated hatred with these barbarians, after living in the depths of Meng Mountain for

generations, they had developed a secret relationship with a few barbarian clans. A lot of rare and precious materials were harvested by these barbarians in the most remote areas of Meng mountain, and they traded them with Meng Village.

Therefore, with the help of these barbarians who had a secret relationship with Meng Village, they managed to manipulate the real barbarians into setting up a trap along the roadside, ready to ambush a parade of coaches which was full of salts, foods, and beautiful women.

With Wu Qi's careful and brilliant planning, these nearly three thousand barbarians never suspected that they were being used by someone else, they just stayed hiding happily in the valley. Right now, when they heard the signal, without hesitation they immediately rushed out, initiated the crazy and brutal attack toward Yi Yan's coaches.

Those poor guards of Yi Family, before they could find out who was the attacker was, those arrows had rained down upon them like a storm, killing nearly half of them. Wu Qi had witnessed the power of these arrows before. Once they hit someone, the person would have his body begin to shrink almost immediately, his blood turning into some nasty dirty liquid and splashing out in an instant.

The cries of pain never stopped, and every second, there were more and more guards that got themselves killed. When facing the attacks of these barbarians, those guards' reactions were obviously slower.

These guards were brought here for the Yi brothers by their family. They were not good at fighting. The biggest help for Yi Yan in Little Meng City were actually those guards who betrayed him,. Those warriors, who had lived for a long time in Little Meng City, were the ones who had the most

combat experience and strong abilities.

The barbarians flocked toward Yi Yan's coaches in the thousands and surrounded all of them, after a round of countless blades slashing and axes chopping, all of Yi Yan's guards were killed on the spot. A few coaches were pulled to roadside by these barbarians and had their door curtains tear down. The cries of women from these coaches stimulated these barbarians to attack even harder.

Luckily, the Yi Family had sent a team of guards from Ruyang and protect Yi Yan. These guards were the elites of the Yi Family. Their equipment, cultivation level, and fighting spirits were far above the level of those sissy guards from before.

Nearly hundreds of these guards had gathered around Yi Yan, Yi De, Yi Xing, and Yi Cu, forming a huge round-shaped formation, and they started moving to the side of the road, slowly. They were heading to a field with large rocks scattered through it. With the strength of these guards, if they could get to that field and stay in a group, they could defend themselves and fight off these barbarians.

But, something happened that made Yi Yan and his men despair!

Three barbarian leaders rushed out from valley, each holding a bone flute, a bone staff, and a bone blade. These weapons unleashed a freezing chiill, an ear-splitting ghostly howl, and a six-foot long, grayish blade light, respectively, toward Yi Yan's group.

The howling noise of the bone flute could disperse the soul of a human. The freezing breeze from the bone staff could suck out one's bone

marrow. And the blade light of the bone blade always targeted at one's neck. In just a blink of an eye, seventeen elite guards of the Yi Family had been killed, all of them had their head chopped down by the blade light, and their souls and bone marrow were dispersed and sucked away by the chilling breeze and ghostly howl.

An insidious sneer suddenly came out from one of the coaches, in next second, four faded shadowy figures burst out from the coach.

Wu Qi kept nodding his head, so Yi Family really had sent new assassins to protect Yi Yan and his brothers!

Raising his hand slowly, Wu Qi sneered and said, "Everybody gets ready. Slaughter every single person down there!"

The men from Meng Village got on their single horn deer, and the soldiers of the third battalion got on their Raptors.

With Wu Qi leading from the front, all of the men descended from the mountain slowly, getting closer to the battlefield quietly.

Chapter 31 – Beheaded

Assassins!

They were a special trained deathsworn soldier, fielded by wealthy and influential families within the Great Yan Dynasty. Talented orphans were chosen and trained with cruel and brutal techniques, fed with all kinds of medicines, and taught a wild, crazy, and unique evil skill. All of these things had turned them into the ultimate killing machines.

Every single assassin sweared their loyalty to the chief of the family, and they would do anything the chief commanded them to do.

Right before these four new assassins jumped into the battlefield, they had swallowed the forbidden pill that gave them ten times their normal strength. Their bodies expanded in an instant. Like four dark clouds, they thrust themselves towards the three barbarian leaders while making ghostly howls.

Wu Qi kept staring at the battlefield from the slope. He could tell that, although these four assassins were pretty strong, if they didn't risk their lives to attack those three barbarian leaders, who had lower tier magical weapons, they would just get themselves killed. Just like the four assassins who got themselves killed by Lu Chengfeng's Grand White Gold Dagger Formation.

Their strength had increased by ten times, and their speed increased by, at least, three times.

The sudden appearance of these assassins had caught the three barbarian leaders off guard, and they only had the time to command the blade lights to cut off a leg of an assassin. Blood was splashing around, and with the loud shouting command of a barbarian leader, the blade light flew back and chased behind the four sprinting assassins. However, all the four assassins, including the one had his leg chopped off, were all sprinting forward crazily, without caring about the threat from the blade light.

Finally, the freezing breeze swept across the four assassins, making them tremble and slowing their speed down by a third. The ear-splitting ghostly howl hit them at the same time, and the assassin whose leg was chopped off and bleeding badly became the first target. In an instant, his head exploded. The freezing breeze had covered his entire body, sucking out all of his blood and making him turn into a mummy.

All nearby barbarians were cheering and yelling crazily, with excitement, they all began to turn around and look in the direction of their leaders.

The blade light struck again. The barbarian leader who was controlling the blade spit out a mouthful of blood onto the blade to ignite it, doubling its speed. It slashed down onto the body of another assassin at lightning speed. A huge amount of blood splashed everywhere, and the assassin's body was cut in half, falling to the ground while screaming horribly.

Following the deaths of the two assassins, the other two assassins had finally gotten up to a very close distance from the barbarian leaders. Without saying anything, their bodies inflated at an incredible speed. The next second, both of them exploded into thousands of tiny chunks of meat and blood. This dark meat and blood splattered everywhere and

reached at least thirty feet away, three barbarian leaders, who suffered from the intense explosion at such a close distance, died on the spot, having their bodies torn apart and being blasted everywhere.

The dark blood splashing around had hit all the barbarians and guards of the Yi Family. It was like an incredibly strong acid and immediately corroded their bodies, causing their muscles to melt and dropped off. These victims could only scream in pain, struggling and rolling on the ground. In just a few seconds, all of them had died.

Wu Qi, who witnessed this, had his face twist in disgust. He was wondering what kind of evil skill these assassins practiced in, killing others with suicide, in such evil and brutal way. Shaking his head, he brought his men and came down from the mountain quickly. Soon, they had arrived at the side of the road.

After the deaths of the four assassins, the strongest fighting force defending Yi Yan and his brothers was gone. Under the protection of dozens of elite guards, the Yi brothers kept yelling and screaming while retreating towards the rocks in the field. Those barbarians had started raging when they saw their leaders were killed in such a brutal way. With a very fast speed, they killed the rest of the people in the parade, howling angrily and chasing after Yi Yan and his men.

More than a thousand barbarians were attacking the few dozen elite guards. While these well-equipped guards were mid-level practitioners, they couldn’t resist this endless attack. In just thirty minutes, while they were still a hundred feet away from the rock field, the number of guards had been reduced by half.

When these barbarians started raging, they simply attacked without

bothering for their own lives. They blocked the blades and pikes of those guards with their bodies, pulling them off from their rides by force. Once a guard was pulled down from his ride, dozens of barbarians would storm in and strike him with their heavy blades and axes, like and endless spattering of rain they killed the guards in the cruelest and most brutal ways.

Yi Yan was completely terrified, his pale white meat kept wobbling like there was no tomorrow. He made a sorrowful howl and said, “Oh my dear Heavens, what sin have I done? Why are these barbarians attacking us? Oh dear Heavens, dear Earth, please hurry and send some help!”

Suddenly, a barbarian threw out a hand axe. The rough hand axe was made of black iron, and the edge was not sharp at all. However, the barbarian who thrown it was quite strong, and the axe flew across the air with a loud swooshing sound, forcefully chopping into Yi Yan’s left shoulder.

An inhuman howl shook the land as Yi Yan’s left arm was chopped off his shoulder. His blood was splashing out, like a fountain. Yi Xing, Yi De, and Yi Cu shouted out in disbelief at the same time. Without hesitation, they immediately hid behind Yi Yan’s back. With Yi Yan’s mountain-like body, he was the best option to be a human shield. The trio had completely forgotten about their ‘brotherhood’ and ‘familial bonds’.

Yi Yan’s body trembled violently and he roared at those family guards crazily, “You useless fools! If you can’t kill all these barbarians, what is your value to my family? You all are just pieces of shit! When I return to my family, I’ll definitely sell all your wives and family members off to be mining slaves!”

Yi Yan's curse had ignited the wild side of these guards. Tens of these guards leapt forward at the same time, unleashing their internal energy at full force. Three foot long, greenish sword light shoot out from the tips of their weapon, carrying with them an ear-splitting swooshing sound as they slashed toward those barbarians.

The greenish sword light was invincible, no matter whether it was a blade or a pike, or even armor, it was unable to defend from it. These guards swung their weapons and attacked any enemies in front of them, chopping off heads, arms, and even the legs of those barbarians, flooding the place with blood and human bodies.

With the energy of mid-level practitioners, the sword light could last for, at most, ten minutes. In just this short period of time, the guards were able to kill several hundred barbarians. Their internal energy was finally depleted, and they had been surrounded by barbarians, no doubt they were going to get killed soon.

"Use the 'Bloody Battle Pill', I will make sure your family members live decent lives!" The leader of the guards from the Yi Family shouted out and suddenly gave an order.

Tens of Yi Family guards, who had depleted their internal energy, shouted 'understood' at the same time, then they all took out a bloody red colored pill and put it into their mouths. In the next second, their bodies inflated like the four assassins, and a massive amount of energy was unleashed from within their bodies, like an explosion. With that, all of them raised their weapons up again, but now a six-foot long sword light shot out from the tip.

Wherever the sword light passed, everything in its way was shattered.

These guards leapt forward while laughing out loud, soon there were another three hundred barbarians that were killed by them. After that, blood started to flow out from their seven apertures, and their bodies exploded.

The leader of guards took a cruel glimpse at his dead subordinates, then turned around and waved his hand to the other group of guards, saying, “Use the Bloody Battle Pill!”

“Understood!” The group of guards clenched their teeth tightly and took a look at the barbarians around them, which had been significantly reduced, then they took out the pill and swallowed it. Another round of suicide attacks, another over two hundred dead barbarians. In the blink of an eye, more than half of the over a thousand-strong barbarians had been killed. The blood and dirt on the ground had mixed up and become a foot-thick black mud.

The spirit of the barbarians was weakening. No matter how brutal and cruel these barbarians were, they could feel fear too. Looking at the dead bodies of their friends, and looking again at the over twenty surviving Yi Family guards, these barbarian’s courage fled them.

Staring at each other in panic, these barbarians shouted at the same time, and turned around and fled into the nearby woods.

Holding left shoulder with his right hand, Yi Yan let out a nearly insane laugh and said, “Chase after them abd kill them all! Damn bastards, they not only hurt me, they also killed the emmisary! This will be a big problem. All of you must help me kill all of them!”

The emmisary was killed, someone had to get the blame for it. Among all the people here, Yi Yan who had lost an arm, was the best candidate to take the blame. He was crippled by losing an arm, and the Yi Family couldn't use him anymore. Using him to take the blame was the best option for them.

Thinking about his miserable future, Yi Yan clenched his teeth tightly, cursing aloud, and ordering his guards to kill more barbarians.

Yi Wei, who was the leader of the Yi Family guards, had red eyes too. He was not doing his job well, and the man he supposed to protect had gotten his arm chopped off,. Even if he could return to the Yi Family safely, his position in Yi Family would definitely be affected. It was all due to the trouble caused by these barbarians, these damn barbarians!

Taking off his helmet, Yi Wei roared angrily. Then he left behind a few guards to protect Yi Yan and his brothers, before raising his sword up high and charging forward to persue those barbarians. He circulated his internal energy, and a dark blue, watery light shot out from the tip of his sword. It was a six foot long sword light.

The peak of the Houtian level. Yi Wei had reached this level. He could unleash a six-foot long sword light for at least fifteen minutes. This was more than enough time for him to kill a few hundred barbarians.

When Wu Qi saw the watery light on Yi Wei's sword, he smiled. Yi Wei was cultivating with a water elemental skill. Of course his internal energy would be of the water element! Not only this, it was a rare divergence of the water element, an ice skill! These types of skills had a subtle internal energy and a higher purity than ordinary elemental skills! Besides, he was a peak Houtian practitioner!

Screaming at the top of his voice, Wu Qi rushed out from the woods while riding on a single horned deer. The six hundred men from Meng Village, and the five hundred elite soldiers of the third battalion followed behind him and strucke at the same time.

The thunder-liked sound of their charge had scared those fleeing barbarians and Yi Yan's group, making their faces turned pale in and instant.

The men from Meng Village sprinted forward like wildfire in a field. They separated into smaller groups and struck at those fleeing barbarians, chopping off their heads like they were chopping some onions. This filled them with so much fear that they turned around and ran in Yi Yan's direction.

The five hundred elite soldiers of the third battalion were all wearing all black armor. Like a silent iceberg, they marched ruthlessly and efficiently forward in a neat formation. They were moving like a running mountain, crushing everything in its path. No matter if it was the fleeing barbarians, or the Yi Family guards who were pursuing the barbarians, all of them got crushed and killed in front of this giant mountain.

Yi Yan scream out loud in extreme terror, "Help, Yi Wei, save me!"

Yi Wei, who had just beheaded over thirty barbarians, turned around hastily, he suddenly realized his mistake. He had just ditched the person who he was supposed to be protecting and came out this far!

With a loud shout, Yi Wei, who had his mind disturbed, turned his ride

around and sprinted toward Yi Yan.

Wu Qi had hidden among the men from Meng Village, and gotten close to Yi Wei. When Yi Wei retreated, Wu Qi had immediately thrown out his lower tier magical dagger, after injecting a large amount of internal energy into it, with a loud whooshing noise, the dagger cut through the air at an incredible speed, impaling into Yi Wei's body from behind.

The lower tier magical dagger was razor sharp, and it had took away Yi Wei's life in an instant. However, his internal energy was still flowing within his body.

Without hesitation, Wu Qi leapt forward and placed his palm onto Yi Wei's dantian. A huge amount of water elemental energy was sucked out by his palm and immediately became part of his innate water energy. In just two seconds, Wu Qi had absorbed all of Yi Wei's internal energy. With a kick, he sent his body flying.

He let out a satisfied laugh, and, without wasting any time, he ran swiftly and came to be in front of the Yi brothers.

"In your next life, don't get in my way!"

His palm was like a razor sharp blade, gently swiping through the neck of the Yi brothers.

Blood shot up high into the air, like a fountain, as four heads flew up into the sky.

Chapter 32 – Marquis

On the drill ground of Little Meng City, a large umbrella was blocking the scorching sun. Wu Qi was laying flat on a bamboo couch underneath the umbrella. On his left was a plate of braised wild boar ears, and in his right hand, a glass of fine red bronze wine sat. He was singing some song pleasantly while drinking wine every now and again.

Faded water vapor was hovering around Wu Qi, forcing the heat away and making it so that no dust could touch his clothes. In hot weather like this, Wu Qi could stay cool, dry, and clean, regardless of his surroundings. This might be the one thing that gave him the most pleasure in this world.

In contrast, the drill ground beside him was covered with dust. A few thousand City Guards were being cruelly trained by Zhang Hu and Hu Wei.

Zhang Wu and his barbarian hunters were teaching these City Guards the techniques and skills of melee combat, while Hu Wei and the elites from the third battalion were responsible for training these rookies to work together in different formations. The combination of both was perfect. It had made these City Guards into real soldiers in a short period of time.

Within the woods outside the city, there were twenty thousand new recruits undergoing more brutal and cruel training. The training program was prepared by Wu Qi, and he used the special forces training program back on Earth as a guide, but had the key performance index increased by ten to twenty times. Since this world was so rich in energy, all the men

here were extra strong, when compared to men from Earth, therefore, no matter how tough the training was, no one would die in the process.

Those soldiers who could get past the initial boot camp in the woods, would proceed to get themselves torturously trained by Zhang Hu and Hu Wei on the drill grounds. At that time, they would be considered an official rookie City Guard.

Lu Chengfeng had become the new acting Mayor without any challenges, so, naturally, Wu Qi had taken over his previous job and become the new acting General. Since he had become the new General, Wu Qi had to show his abilities. With the incredible knowledge of Le Xiaobai that merged with him, it was a piece of cake for Wu Qi to develop a training program for new recruits boot camp, and he even made a set of military rules.

The people in this world were born to be soldiers, it just took a little time and effort to train them. Also, Lu Chengfeng had brought a foundation skill - 'Tome of the Enduring Soldier', which was perfect for killing in a combat, and this was taught to these City Guards. In just a few months time, these soldiers had transformed completely. Now they looked like an elite army.

An elite army of nearly thirty thousand soldiers. This strong force had made Lu Chengfeng become someone who shouldn't be taken lightly. Therefore, these past few days, Lu Chengfeng had looked bright and breezy, focusing all his attention on managing Little Meng City and going through everything by himself, doing his best to make Little Meng City become stronger and even more prosperous. After all, this was his first job. Shouldn't he be working hard at it?

Three months ago, the ex-Mayor of Little Meng City, Yi Yan, and his men were killed by barbarians. The incident soon quieted down, like a drop of water under the hot sun. Even the Yi Family didn't pursue it any further. Yi Yan was not the first one who got himself killed by barbarians, and he wouldn't be the last. Every couple years, there would be a batch of Little Meng City officials killed by these barbarians, so people of the Lu Kingdom had gotten used to it.

That's why Wu Qi could lay comfortably on the drill ground, watching the scene in front of him, as if it was a monkey show, and examining how Zhang Hu and Hu Wei trained these unlucky City Guards brutally. For Wu Qi, watching those soldiers be torturously trained to extreme tiredness was one of the most pleasant feelings he had since coming to this world!

"Making other's sorrows into one's own happiness, this life lesson of Le Xiaobai is really ingenious!"

Casually crossing his legs, Wu Qi suddenly grabbed a wooden stick and threw it out forcefully. He shouted, "Xiaobai, are you trying to be lazy? Hurry, move your body! Move it! Anyone who dares to slow down, I'll beat you with this stick!"

Meng Xiaobai, who was wearing a custom training suit and carrying two hundred pounds of iron weight on his back, cried out in pain. He stroked his sore butt, which was hit by the stick, clenched his teeth tightly, and followed the movement of the elite soldiers from the third battalion, who were teaching them how to change their positions in order to switch formations. For each formation change, the heavy pike in their hands, which was made specially for training, had to follow a specific sequence of actions, like stabbing, blocking, slashing, and matching their teammates beside them to perform an assault or defend maneuver.

On top of their heads was the scorching sun and they were surrounded by flying dust. The weight of the training gears on their bodies was more than four hundred pounds. Painful. Incredibly painful. But, no matter Meng Xiaobai or any other men from Meng Village, no one ever complained about this.

The 'Mighty Ox Strength' was circulating through their bodies at an incredible speed, keeping their their strength replenished. Mighty Ox Strength, it was a skill of self-torture. Just like the hard working ox, the best way to cultivate with Mighty Ox Strength was to overloaded one's body with a massive amount of exercises and to squeeze every last drop of energy out of one's body, making the body break through it's limit and activating the strongest potential of the person.

The Mighty Ox Strength was not an advanced skill, but those who cultivated with it would become a warrior which had super strong stamina, strength, and a great fund of life.

Wu Qi had made himself clear with Meng Xiaobai and the other men. There was no free lunch in this world. If these men from Meng Village wanted to have a bright and prosperous future by working for Lu Chengfeng, they had to work hard, harder than anybody else! If not, how would you expect Lu Chengfeng to pay you handsomely? Why did he have to give you the power and wealth? If you wanted to get these, work hard for it!

Under the preaching of Wu Qi, these six hundred men from Meng Village transformed into six hundred wild ox, training themselves with self-torturing excercises.

Meng Xiaobai was not a fully grown into his adult, as he was still young. Although he was having a hard time following the pace of the training, under the supervision of Wu Qi, he still clenched his teeth tightly and followed every single training exercise. In just three months, Meng Xiaobai's strength and skill had become completely different.

Finally, a sound of beating drums could be heard, and all the soldiers on the drill grounds stopped their exercises at the same time, regaining their strength by breathing rapidly. It was lunch time, and the overloaded training had made these soldiers feel extremely hungry. Their eyes seeming to glow with hunger.

The soldiers who worked in kitchen smiled and pushed some big carts out onto the drill grounds. Delicious meat, fine liquor, fragrant rice. Despite the fact that each of them was only allowed to drink half a pint of herbal liquor to stimulate their qi and blood, they were allowed to eat as much as they wanted. As long as there was more room in their stomachs, the food never ran out.

The few thousand soldiers on the drill grounds gulped simultaneously, producing a loud unified gulping sound.

Wu Qi let out a happy laugh and picked up the last few pieces of braised pig ears, swallowing them. Then he finished all the wine in the glass and walked toward the door of drill grounds while clapping his hands. "My brothers, eat all you can and drink to your fullness. One hour from now, the training resumes. *Sigh* I have a different mission. Now I need to go to the Green Mountain Restaurant and enjoy some delicacies and fine wine! But, why not bring some of you with me? Don't worry, when you can defeat Zhang Hu and his men and can become the personal guards of the Mayor's Mansion, then you will be able to join me!"

Wu Qi left the drill ground while laughing out loud, and a few thousand pairs of greenish eyes stared at Wu Qi, all of them gulping once again.

All of them turned their heads and stared at Zhang Hu's barbarian hunters and Hu Wei's elite soldiers. These rookies were not fooled, they knew it was impossible for them to defeat Zhang Hu and Hu Wei. But there was a chance they could defeat their subordinates! Leaving the City Guard and becoming the personal guards of the Mayor's Mansion, this had become the biggest dream of these rookies, and it became the biggest motivation for them to train harder every single day!

What to do? Wu Qi was here every day and said something to provoke and seduce these rookies, and they were all falling into his trap!

Walking out from the drill grounds in joy, Wu Qi clapped his hands. After that, he jumped onto a single horned deer that was brought over by one of the personal guards. The speed of Single Horned Deer was slower than the Raptor that the City Guards used, but it could travel through rough terrains, which made it a better choice when traveling through woods and mountains. Besides, it looked prettier and its fur was soft, thus, Wu Qi always prefered that Single Horned Deer over others.

Patting the horn of his deer, Wu Qi rode slowly in the direction of the Green Mountain Restaurant, asking with an indifferent tone, "Any news for past few days? I know that Young master was auditing the income tax some time ago. What was the reaction of those tradesmen?"

Four personal guards were following behind Wu Qi. They were all elites that Wu Qi had hand picked from the Personal Guards of the Mayor's

Mansion. All of them were peak mid-level practitioners. Hearing Wu Qi's question, the strongest and most experienced guard among four, Zhao Chenzui, said, "Someone was trying to bribe the young master, like they always did before, under Yi Yan, in order to escape from the punishment of tax evasion, but they were seriously punished by the young master. He even confiscated half of their belongings."

"They are so greedy!" Wu Qi scratched his head and said, "They have been making their fortunes in Little Meng City and they still want to evade their taxes? Tsk~ They really thought our young master was like that damn fatty? Send someone to watch these tradesmen. If they try to do anything funny, let me know immediately!"

A bright smile jumped to Wu Qi's face. Those tradesmen were on his list of targets, he couldn't wait to find some treasures in their coffers that can be used by cultivators. But, stealing from them without any valid reason made Wu Qi felt bad. He just wished they would do something that would give him a reason to steal everything from their coffers!

Zhao Chenzui affirmed the order, then he swung his horse whip and chased away a few stray dogs nearby.

There was something odd about the prosperity of Little Meng City. The street was always packed with busy caravans traveling back and forth, and the chattering of human and cries of animals merged into an unpleasant melody. At any time, there was a huge amount of goods being distributed out from Little Meng City to every part of the Great Yan Dynasty. At the same time, there was a huge amount of goods arrived back at Little Meng City.

However, when these people saw Wu Qi coming by on his Single

Horned Deer, all of them moved to the side of the road and made way for him to pass. Paying their respects by bowing down.

Who didn't know Wu Qi in Little Meng City? He was the chief right-hand man of the Acting-Mayor, having the power of the General and a ferocious army working under him. He controlled the strongest military force within a five-hundred-mile radius of Little Meng City.

With such a terrifying background, who dared to show him even the slightest bit of disrespect?

But Wu Qi never showed a cocky manner. No matter who bows to him, he always holds his fist and greets that person with a smile. The unique bright smile of Wu Qi made everyone feel they were standing in a refreshing breeze. All of them felt Wu Qi was a friendly man.

After greeting the people he encountered along the way, Wu Qi and his men had come to the best restaurant in Little Meng City, the Green Mountain Restaurant. For the past few months, Wu Qi had become a regular patron here, so when the footman saw him, he hurried and greet him, then he leads their rides to the side.

Clapping the shoulder of the footman, Wu Qi gave him a silver coin and, with a bright smile, said, "Take good care of them."

The footman grabbed over the silver coin happily and said, "Please rest assured, no one would dare neglect the rides of my lord?"

Wu Qi nodded his head and brought Zhao Chenzui and the other men

into the restaurant, finding themselves a table next to the street on the third floor.

Leaning on the window, Wu Qi looked down into the busy street while singing songs leisurely. Little Meng City, this is the first place he set his foot in after coming to this world. He needed to use the resources here and lay down a solid foundation for himself! He had anobligation, and must maintain the prosperity and stability of this city.

After all, for the past three months, Wu Qi had gathered dozens of soul stones with his authority of General. After gave a portion to Lu Chengfeng, the rest of them were used by him in cultivation.

In just three months, all the meridians in his body had been strengthened nine times by innate water energy. Wu Qi could break through to the Xiantian level at anytime now.

Taking a deep breath, Wu Qi looked into sky afar and murmured while smiling, “Green Mountain Restaurant? Hehe. Green City Mountain, I will be back!”

Suddenly, some noise came from the street, and people were running wildly, and yelling and screaming. There were even some animals howling in panic.

Wu Qi extended his head out from window hurriedly, and saw a group of intrepid guards were waving long whips made from steel threads, striking and whipping the people and animals on the street in front of them.

Behind these guards, a weird looking old man, wearing a glossy red long robe, was yelling with a sharp tone, “This is the coach of the Marquis! Who dares to get in the way? Kill them, kill all who get in the way!”

Wu Qi instantly started to boil with rage. Marquis? What the fuck?

Chapter 33 - Ruthless

In front of a roadside shop, two pointy haired kids were playing happily. Suddenly, the people on either side of the street started to push each other around and it soon turned into a chaotic mess. The two kids were pushed down on the ground by someone and were dragged and kicked a few steps away from the shop. If the crowds kept on pushing this way, these two kids would soon be killed by the massive crowd of people.

Wu Qi pulled up the front end of his robe and jumped out of the window, immediately pushing away a few men, who were running wildly, and pulled up the two little kids, who had become filled with shock and fear and were, thus, staring out blankly. Wu Qi hugged and carried both of them back to the shop they were playing by just now, handing them to a woman who was crying and yelling after witnessing the great danger her children had just encountered. After that, Wu Qi turned around and walked back to the middle of the street.

A loud noise of a whip came near in an instant, and Wu Qi saw a steel whip was coming his way. Judging by the speed of the whip, the man who swung the whip was trying to kill Wu Qi with this strike. With the amount of force behind this strike, even a huge rock would be shattered by the custom made steel whip, let alone Wu Qi’s head.

Wu Qi raised up his hand and grabbed on the long whip, bare handedly. A powerful force exploded from the whip, trying to tear Wu Qi’s palm apart. But with the layers of water energy released as a whirlpool in the center of his palm, that powerful force was neutralized and he had firmly grabbed on the whip.

With his full force, Wu Qi pulled the whip toward him and applied a powerful spinning force at the same time. The ugly man who was sitting on his ride could only feel that there was a huge whirlpool that was sucking his body and, in the next second, he was pulled off his ride and thrown in Wu Qi's direction, slamming into the ground with his own weight.

With a powerful kick, Wu Qi stomped on the man's crotch and kept stomping continuously until the small piece of meat had become a flat piece of meat. The man let out a terrifying scream, throwing away the whip in his hand and starting to roll and struggle on the floor, pressing on his crotch with both hands.

Those guards who were whipping the people who got in their way happily, immediately stopped what they were doing, and threw an angry look in the direction that their mate was assaulted.

The old man in the red robe started trembled, due to anger, and he rode forward quickly and pointed his finger at Wu Qi's nose, shouting, "Where did this dirty bastard come from? You, how dare you injure a man working for the Marquis! You, what is your name? Where is your birth place? Is there anybody else in your family? On my command, capture all his family members and leave no survivors!"

Wu Qi rolled his eyes and grabbed the guy on the floor, slamming him toward the old man in red robe with tremendous force.

The man had landed flat on the old man, and both of them let out painful screams at the same time before being thrown tens of feet away.

The guy had a muscular body and could still withstand the powerful attack, but that old man was pretty weak, basically being just like ordinary folk, the heavy attack made him choke on his own breath, having a hard time breathing in fresh air.

If those guards didn't hurry to his side and massage on his chest, this old man would have died.

"Kill my family members? Hmm, all my relatives had dead. If you want to kill them, you need to visit them in the afterlife!" Wu Qi stared at the old man, who just begun to regain his breath, and he couldn't help but burst out with a joyful laugh. This old man wanted to kill Wu Qi's family members? Wu Qi didn't mind give this old man a free ride to hell to visit his parents.

The old man in red robe had his face darken as he became extremely angry. With a trembling finger, he, again, pointed at Wu Qi, after coughing out some thick phlegm and having his breath smoothen, he shouted immediately, "You bunch of fools, why are you all standing there? Kill this fellow, kill him now!"

Zhao Chenzui and the other three personal guards had jumped out from the restaurant too, when they heard the anger roar of the old man, Zhao Chenzui let out a loud laugh and said, "Fuck! This is Little Meng City and you are yelling to kill General? Old fool, I think you must be the product of your mother mating with a wild boar! Why are you so stupid?"

Simply throwing a hissing arrow high up into the sky, the three-inch arrow soon reached the height of two hundred feet, making an ear-splitting hissing sound along its way up.

In a very short amount of time, a rapid clatter of footsteps could be heard coming from all directions, and all the pedestrians started to get off the street, looking for shelter in those roadside shops. Soon, groups of City Guards had stormed in and surrounded the street. Along the streets there were groups of archers standing by as well, pulling their bow strings tightly and aiming at the old man's group.

Those muscular men who were getting ready to strike Wu Qi became stunned by what happened, and they immediately retreated and stood behind the old man in red.

A City Guard captain ran out from the army and kneeled down with one leg in front of Wu Qi, with a fury and desperate manner he said, "Sir, a team of our soldiers at the North Gate has been assaulted, all their limbs were broken and left laying on the ground! This is the group of men who assaulted them! Our men's limbs were broken by their long whips!"

Wu Qi gazed at the steel whip on the ground, and signaled the captain to stand aside with a hand gesture.

Taking a few steps forward, Wu Qi stared at the old man in red and sneered, "So, your men wounded City Guards who were on duty at the North Gate?"

The old man in red sneered and was just about to say something when an impatient voice came from the back of the City Guards who were standing behind of old man, "Old dog, you're becoming useless! I asked you to clear the way for me, why are you taking so long? Why are there so many idiots blocking our way?"

A group of people appeared at the other end of the street. There was a group of around six hundred soldiers wearing full armor suits and red war robes, who were escorting a few coaches. The leading coach had its door curtain pushed aside, showing half a face that that was angrily glimpsing at the City Guards who had gotten in their way.

The face appeared to be that of a handsome man with a fair complexion. But, when looking into his watery, amorous eyes, there was a perverse look that made anyone who stared at him feel unpleasant. Looking inside the coach, Wu Qi found out this man was totally naked. Also, behind the man there were two pale white naked bodies, both of which were twisting and moving slowly on his back.

This guy was actually having sex in the coach!

Wu Qi glared at that man and, with a sneer, asked, “Who are you? Why are you behaving so recklessly in Little Meng City?”

The man laughed grimly, then he pushed aside the curtain and walked out of the coach. Before he came out, he simply grabbed over a white cloth and tied it around his waist to cover his crotch. The white cloth, stained with a patch of fresh blood, mae people’s mind go wild trying to imagine where the blood came from.

Reaching his hand into the coach and pulled out a beautiful and naked teenage girl who was, at most, in her early teens, the man started to kiss and bite on the girl’s breast in front of everyone. After a round of lustful actions, the man finally raised his head up and glared back at Wu Qi, “Behave recklessly? Pooh! Who do you think you are? I’m a Marquis and I

had traveled around the Lu Kingdom. Who dares to call me reckless?"

The teenage girl was twisting her young body in the man's arms, trying to use her body to rub against the man's sensitive parts.

Wu Qi threw an examining look at the man, and he can't help but twist his lips.

No matter in which world, there was always someone who led a life of luxury and privilege from the moment they were born. The man looked like he was in his late twenties, with the height of eight feet and a near perfectly lean body muscles, his handsome face was simply the icing on the cake. Except for the pair of amorous eyes, there was nothing else on his body could would be complained about.

[ED: StackThatCoins and I checked and rechecked the raw. The man is 8 Chi tall [8.399 feet tall] o.o]

The man reached his hand in between the teenage girl's legs and rubbed few times, then he gazed at Wu Qi with an overbearing expression and, with a cold tone, said, "So, you are the General of Little Meng City? No wonder you can summon the City Guards! Hmm, those idiots guarding the North Gate are your subordinates? They were asking us to pay some sort of tax before we can enter here, what bastards they were! I had broken their limbs as the punishment for asking me to pay, are you happy with that?"

Wu Qi took a deep breath and, with a stern voice, asked, "Who are you?"

Kissed the teenage girl's lips, the man replied with a proud expression,

“I’m the son of the Lord of Puyang, Marquis Liu Suifeng. I had been long since told that Little Meng City was a place with beautiful scenery and friendly folk, therefore, I’m here today to enjoy the place.”

Pushed on the neck of the teenage girl and thrown her back into coach, Liu Suifeng licked away some rogue stains on his palm and, together with an off-toned laughter, said, “You’re just a tiny General of Little Meng City, who are you to get in my way? Do you want to die?”

All of a sudden, an almost five foot long sword appeared in Liu Suifeng’s hand. In the next second he swung it and slashed forward.

With a swooshing sound, an invisible force was unleashed from the sword and, in an instant, the two City Guards who were blocking the path in front of Liu Suifeng cried out horribly, their long pikes had been slashed apart by the force. But, the invisible force didn’t stop there. It continued flying forward and hit right onto the chest plate of both soldiers, ripping the armor off and leaving inch deep wounds on their chest.

Blood splashed out immediately, and both City Guards took a few steps backward and sat down on the floor.

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes, he snapped immediately, “Zhao Chenzui, save the men!”

Zhao Chenzui and few other personal guards, who were also ex-rogues, sprinted forward, one of them took out a medicated paste and started to dress up the wounded soldiers. The medicated paste used by rogue was a very effective treatment, even better than the medicated paste used by

the army of Lu Kingdom. That's the reason why Wu Qi ordered Zhao Chenzui to save the soldiers.

The old man in red burst out an ear-splitting shout suddenly, "Marquis, this is the guy who got in our way! Your servant was clearing the path right in front, he was the one who jumped in our way! This fellow had no respect to the Marquis. The death punishment, he shall be killed! We must kill him by giving him a thousand cuts!"

Liu Suifeng's expression turned solemn, he pointed at Wu Qi and sneered, "Hear that? Kill yourself now, don't get your family into troubles!"

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes, he let out a bright laugh suddenly. Shaking his head, Wu Qi said, while smiling, "I really wish to know, how I can get my family into trouble!"

After staring at Wu Qi for some time, Liu Suifeng burst out with a crazy laugh, "You're gone! All your family members are gone! Your Marquis, me, has decided that I want all the men in your family killed. All the women in your family will take turns being played with by me!"

Waved his long sword, Liu Suifeng shouted his command, "Men, capture him, torture him, and get the information on where he was born! If his parents and family are still alive, get them here for me! If he has no family, capture all his neighbors! Kill all the men. As for the women, get me those pretty and cute girls, I want to fuck them to dead!"

All the soldiers in full armor and red war robes affirmed his command at the same time. After that, they started to charge forward while riding

on their horses. They were charging forward in a street within the city!

These soldiers hold their nearly twenty feet long pike flat, they were targeting the City Guards of Little Meng City!

Wu Qi felt a cramp on his lips. This Liu Suifeng, his ruthlessness simply had no boundaries!

Lawlessness, this was ultimately lawlessness!

Do you really think I, Wu Qi, would be scared of Liu Suifeng?

Simply raising up his hand, Wu Qi shouted in a cruel tone, “The barbarians have struke Little Meng City once again. The Marquis, Liu Suifeng, and all his men were killed in the incident! My men, set your arrows free and kill this son of a bitch!”

Hearing the command from their superior, those archers, who had gotten themselves ready on the rooftops, released their bow string immediately, sending kisses of death down on these visitors.

Chapter 34 - Brothers

"Everyone, stop!"

Lu Chengfeng's voice resounded from the other end of the street. Following his voice came several dozen daggers, unleashed from the Grand White Gold Dagger Formation. They were slashing their way through the rain of arrows and breaking these arrows into pieces. Not only this, these daggers even chopped off the front legs of the rides of those visiting soldiers, forcing them to fall off their rides spill onto the street in a mess.

Luckily, these soldiers had not reached to their full speed yet. Right when they saw their fellow soldiers, who were at the foremost of the army, start falling onto ground, they pulled their reigns tight and immediately stopped their charge.

Dozens of daggers continued swirling for a few more rounds through the sky. Eventually, they disintegrated with an ear-splitting *swoosh* sound.

With a pale face and cold sweat on his forehead, Lu Chengfeng had almost depleted his internal energy after unleashed that attack. He grabbed all three of the formation pillars and put them in his bag, leading a group of personal guards and running up to Wu Qi. Lu Chengfeng glared at Wu Qi, who was standing among the crowd, and murmured to him, "Really? How could you do this in front of so many people? Why can't you just find somewhere remote to do things like this?"

Liu Suifeng stared blankly at the archers who were attacking from rooftops beside the street, then, with a trembling hand, he raised up the sword in his hand and pointed at Wu Qi. With an extremely angry tone he cursed, “You dirty peasant! You really dared to order these archers to attack me? You’re dead meat! You, how dare you to assault me, you’re doomed!”

Wu Qi picked his ear with his pinky and shook his head in disdain, “A dog who barks, never bites. How many times had you said you wanted to kill all of my family members?” Throwing a mocking smile at Liu Suifeng, Wu Qi shouted the next second, “If not because of Young Master, I’d kill you right here on this street!”

Liu Suifeng couldn’t help but to keep trembling in anger. With his long sword, he pointed at all the bystanders along the street and, with an angry tone, said, “In front of so many peoples, you really dare to assault the Marquis! You dirty peasant, you’re outrageous!”

Wu Qi took a glimpse at all the town folks around, suddenly he burst out in a laugh, “Pooh! So what if I really kill you in front of these peoples? Do I fear the revenge from your family? If your dad, Lord Puyang wants revenge, and sends an army to attack me, he will find himself lacking an army!”

Slamming on the shoulder of a City Guard standing beside him, Wu Qi snapped, “Remember this, Little Meng City is the territory of I, your master Wu Qi!”

Liu Suifeng shut his mouth. He stared at Wu Qi blankly, and couldn’t think of a thing to say right now. Had he ever met someone as ferocious as Wu Qi? Among the hundreds of kingdoms in the Great Yan Dynasty,

Princes, Lords, and Marquis were the superior peoples. No civilian dared to show even the slightest disrespect to a Marquis! But, this Wu Qi, who was just a tiny little General in Little Meng City, he was trying to kill a Marquis in broad daylight!

Placing his hand on his own neck, Liu Suifeng felt a little bit scared and didn't dare to look at Wu Qi, but he turned around and gazed at Lu Chengfeng, who was pushing his way through the crowd.

"Lu Chengfeng! So this man is your subordinate! Do you know how he almost killed me just now? If even just one hair my head was hurt, you, you……"

With a stern expression on his face, Lu Chengfeng came over and nodded to Wu Qi.

Wu Qi let out a loud laugh again, and he stared at Liu Suifeng and said, "Why doesn't my lord say it like this. If I even hurt one hair of yours, you'll execute all of my young master's relatives?"

Liu Suifeng shuts his mouth up again, while Lu Chengfeng glared at Wu Qi once again. Executing all of Lu Chengfeng's relatives? Even the King of the Lu Kingdom dared not to say this, let alone this Liu Suifeng? Although he was the son of Lord Puyang, Lord Puyang was only a foreign noble with some relations to those in the government of the Lu Kingdom!

Compared to the influence of the government of the Lu Kingdom, the Lu Family had a far greater influence than this Lord Puyang.

With just a simple sentence, Liu Suifeng had his breath taken away and almost fainted, due to anger. He glared at Wu Qi with extreme anger, while his sword trembling in his hand. He just wished he could kill Wu Qi right now, without considering the consequences.

Right when Liu Suifeng was being pissing off by what Wu Qi said, an indifferent voice suddenly came out from a coach behind him, “Marquis Liu, have we arrived at Little Meng City? Hmm, why are the City Guards of Little Meng City are blocking our way? Is it because the General of Little Meng City neglected his job, and turned these City Guards into some sort of robbers that stop innocent travelers and demand money?”

At the same time, a tall young man came out from the coach, with just a step, the young man flew past Liu Suifeng’s coach, like a weightless feather, moving to stand beside Liu Suifeng. Wu Qi focused his vision on the man. It looked like his cultivation level was higher than Wu Qi’s. It seems like he was just one step away from the Xiantian level.

However, after injecting some innate water energy into his eyes, Wu Qi found out that this young man’s energy was not concentrated. It looked to be a little out of control when he was circulating his energy. If Wu Qi’s guess was correct, his cultivation level was entirely obtained from foreign objects, either pills or some powerful herbs.

The young man had facial features that were similar to Lu Chengfeng, however, he had a malicious expression and always had his brow dangling down. An evil look kept glowing within his eyes, and his frequent out of focus vision let people who stared into his eyes instantly know that this was not a good guy.

Standing on the coach, this young man stared down at Lu Chengfeng

and, with a stern voice, said, “Elder brother, look at your General. Look at him! Does he knows any rules or laws? According to the law of the Lu Kingdom, civilians shall avoid disturbing a Marquis when they are on their way. But, not only did you disobey this law, you even sent your army to halt the coach of Marquis Liu. What do you actually want?”

The more this young man spoke, the more rage built up within Wu Qi.

Lu Chengfeng, who had begun to understand Wu Qi quite well, took a step forward, standing between the young man and Wu Qi, who was about to explode. Without showing any emotion on his face, Lu Chengfeng said, “So, it was sixth brother? Why didn’t you inform elder brother that you were coming?”

Lu Quyuan, the sixth brother of Lu Chengfeng and the son of Lu Chengfeng’s second uncle, sneered. With his hands on his back, he said, “Marquis Liu has just been assigned as the Military Supervisory Officer for eight provinces. He is responsible for supervising all the military affairs within eight provinces. Little Meng City was ruled under the Province of the Three Mountains. It is one of the eight provinces under the supervisor of the Marquis.”

Staring at Lu Chengfeng with a cold shoulder, Lu Quyuan continued on with a stern tone, “It is time for Quyuan to work in the government too, therefore I had requested father to help and get me a job as the assistant Military Supervisory Officer. Now I can come to Little Meng City and visit you, my eldest brother!”

Liu Suifeng let out a loud laugh, then he went back into his coach and, after some searching, finally found an official letter and a silver token piece. With a proud expression, he threw both of them to Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Chengfeng examined the letter and token closely. On top of the letter it was stated that Liu Suifeng was the new Military Supervisory Officer for eight provinces. He was responsible for supervising all military related affairs within these eight provinces.

Lu Chengfeng's face instantly darkened. Wu Qi dashed over to Lu Chengfeng and asked him what this Military Supervisory Officer actually did. After some whispering, Wu Qi's face turned awful too. He murmured to himself, "If I knew this earlier, I would have killed them just now! After all, there are countless barbarians around Little Meng City, so no matter how many people are killed here, I'll just blame it on those barbarians. I don't think anyone would have doubted us on this!"

The so-called 'Supervisory Officer' was not a regular position in the government. It was just a temporary position created for training the younger generation of those influential families within the Lu Kingdom. They were either supervising the internal affairs or the irrigation systems. Agriculture or business. A few of the sons of influential families would travel in groups around the kingdom, supervising military affairs or internal affairs, and nitpicking every tiny detail they could. After they had done a few of these rounds, they would be familiar with how to work in the government.

The power of these Supervisory Officer was actually not all that big, but, at the same time, they couldn't be underestimated. They had the authority to report anything directly to the top man in the government, and their reports would be put on the table of those lords and the most powerful ministers within the Lu Kingdom. These reports controlled the lives of all the more ordinary government officials in the Lu Kingdom.

If they really found something wrong with a government official, by simply placing a few minor wrongful remarks on the person in a letter,

the future of that official would be completely destroyed.

Besides, all these Supervisory Officers were from wealthy and influential families. They had a powerful family at their back, therefore they could do almost anything they wanted when they out and about. If someone offended them, that person's family would be heavily attacked. Even if the person was the Governor of a province, he would still be in a mess for offending these rich kids.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan both stared at Lu Chengfeng and let out loud laughs at the same time.

While laughing in joy, Lu Quyuan said, "Elder brother, please make the arrangements as for where we shall stay? Also, seal all the official documents and records of the General's Office in Little Meng City. All the money, army provisions, weapons, and equipment have to be sealed too. Until we have run a thorough audit on all military-related affairs, none of the soldiers in Little Meng City shall receive any order from this General!"

Wu Qi had hidden both of his hands in his sleeves, and taken a few steps back. He tilted his head and threw an examining look at Lu Quyuan, calculating in his mind on how much this guy's clothes were worth. At the same time, he was also calculating how much the coach of Liu Suifeng was worth. He swore in his mind that if he couldn't steal everything from them, including their underpants, he would renounce his status as a disciple of the Darkhand Sect!

Lu Chengfeng clenched his teeth tightly and stared at the arrogant and proud Liu Suifeng, then he looked at Liu Quyuan, who was gazing back at him. With a dark look on his face, Lu Chengfeng waved his hand and said, "All soldiers, return to the camp. Without my order, you're forbidden to

leave the camp. Marquis Liu, sixth brother, you two follow me!”

With rapid clatter of footsteps, all the City Guards started to return back to their camp.

Wu Qi pulled over Zhao Chenzui and whispered to him. After that, Zhao Chenzui sneaked into the crowds and left. He was rushing to the new recruit boot camp within the woods, delivering the order of Wu Qi that told them to increase the patrols these next few days, and forbade anyone from leave the place. Silently expanding the army with twenty thousand new recruits and having them privately trained… If this was found out by Lu Quyuan, then… Wu Qi would be forced to blame those barbarians for killing government officials one more time!

Breathing out a long sigh, Wu Qi murmured to himself, “Let’s cut down some troubles! Before I become stronger, I shouldn’t provoke these bastards!”

Suddenly, Wu Qi felt a gaze from the coach of Lu Quyuan that made his body tremble. It rapidly shot through Wu Qi’s body.

Wu Qi was stunned for few seconds and felt numb on in his head. He didn’t dare to look back. He just turned around and set his vision on Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Quyuan jumped off the coach, holding onto Lu Chengfeng’s hand intimately, and said, “Hahaha, elder brother, long time no see. I, your sixth brother, has missed you very much!”

Giving Lu Chengfeng a powerful hug, Lu Quyuan whispered to him, “Elder brother, second brother wanted me to pass you a message. ‘This time, I’ll have fun killing you!’ Do you know why that fatty Yi Yan kept spurning you? It was all second brother’s arrangement, understand?”

Letting go of Lu Chengfeng, Lu Quyuan laughed out loud again, “Elder brother, to be able to see you again today makes me extremely happy!”

Wu Qi kept shaking his head while standing to the side. Could this person really be ‘his brother’?

Chapter 35 - Malice

The Mayor's Mansion was illuminated by beautifully ornamental lights. Inside the main hall of the General's Office, pretty serving ladies were walking back and forth, serving endless fine wines and delicacies to all the guests within. The hall was filled with loud music. Groups of girls were dancing fanatically, their hair was weaved together with colorful ribbons. At a glance, one would they they had been possessed by some demons.

Wu Qi thought there were only six hundred guards and some servants that were following Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan here, but, not far behind their coaches, there was actually another parade of coaches, which held dozens of serving ladies, over twenty female dancers, and all kinds of fine wines, luxurious clothes, *etc*. Also, there was an army of four hundred elite cavalry men escorting this parade. The two of them had actually brought a team of nearly a thousand guards to Little Meng City.

This army of thousand soldiers, no matter their equipment or cultivation level, they were a few times better and stronger than Little Meng City's City Guards. With just a single charge of this elite army, eight thousand City Guards of Little Meng City would be instantly defeated. Whether it was Zhang Hu and his barbarian hunters, or those rogue hunters that had been hired by Lu Chengfeng recently, none of them would be able to fight with this group of soldiers.

Liu Suifeng had a few dozen men, who were currently sitting beside him and feasting with delicacies and fine wines, and all of them were at the peak of the Houtian Warrior Realm. They constantly unleashed a cruel aura, making it so that Zhang Hu and Hu Wei, who were sitting right

beside Lu Chengfeng, were unable to move at all.

"Indeed, with the status of a Marquis, all his right-hand men are so powerful!" Wu Qi took a glance at the messy hall, and shook his head, a frown coming over his face.

The inner courtyard of the Mayor's Mansion had been burnt to ashes, so the only mansion still available within the Mayor's Mansion was the General's Office. Lu Chengfeng was still raising funds, in order to strengthen the city wall of Little Meng City, therefore he had no intention of rebuilding the Mayor's Mansion. Therefore, Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan immediately occupied the General's Office once they came to Mayor's Mansion, making it their place of residence in Little Meng City.

What's worse, Liu Suifeng had held a great dinner on the same evening, as if he was the host, inviting all of the most powerful tradesmen in Little Meng City, and asking them to celebrate his arrival.

Liu Suifeng, Lu Quyuan, and their right-hand men, had occupied the north side of the hall and were throwing a great party. On the west side of the hall, few hundred nervous tradesmen were sitting around, either keeping their heads lowered and their mouths shut, or staring blankly at their wine glasses. Some were whispering with nearby tradesmen, wondering why this lawlessness Marquis Liu asked them to be here.

On the east side of the hall, Wu Qi, Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Hu, Hu Wei and few other people were sitting behind tables, speechless as they watched those dancers perform in a possessed manner. Small and delicate bronze bells were placed behind them and few musicians were passionately playing a fast paced tune.

The bell sounds were pretty annoying, and Wu Qi scratched his head, wondering if there was something wrong with Liu Suifeng's mind. Why did he bring these bronze bell with him when he was traveling.

The awkward party went on for almost fifteen minutes, then Liu Suifeng let out a burp after he had his stomach filled with wines and foods. Then, he simply threw his wine class on the floor. The sound of it smashing into the ground made the dancers stop their dancing. They turned to Liu Suifeng and gave him seductive smiles, taking their leave. The musicians also bowed respectfuly to Liu Suifeng, and followed those dancers, leaving the hall.

Placing both his hands on the messy table, Liu Suifeng threw a stern look at the mass of tradesmen. Under his vision, those tradesmen lowered their heads to show their respect. These tradesmen had been living here for a long time, so there was nothing that happened in Little Meng City that could escape from their notice. They all knew what happened this morning, when Liu Suifeng arrived at the city. This man was not someone they could offend.

This group of people was so lawless, that they even crippled dozens of City Guards at the North Gate, and the Acting-Mayor couldn't do anything to them. He even had to invite them into the Mayor's Mansion. Although these tradesmen were wealthy, they didn't have the courage to offend these rich kids.

After clearing his throat, Liu Suifeng let out a loud laugh, "Gentlemen, I've come a long way to be here. The tough journey was part of my duty to supervise all military related affairs in Little Meng City and protect your safety. Due to me putting such a tiring effort on your behalf, all of

you should show me your gratitude. I know what the specialties of Little Meng City are. Here is a list which lists some invaluable items. Have a look, gentlemen. If you guys have no problems with it, just gather all of them and submit them me, and then there will be no issues between you and me!"

Liu Suifeng waved his hand, then the old man in red, standing behind him, let out an evil laugh. He walked toward those tradesmen and took out a thick scroll out from his sleeve. He threw it onto one of tradesman's tables. With a stern tone, the old man said, "I'm Liu Zhong, butler for the Marquis. After you all have gathered all the listed items, you just come straight to me."

All of a sudden, Liu Zhong grabbed on to one side of the tradesman's, who was standing in front of him, nose and, with a cruel expression, tore his nose from his face. The tradesman couldn't help but cry out in pain, but Liu Zhong burst out laughing and said, "Three days. If you can't get me all the items on the list in three days, your lives will be ruined! I know all of you have special backgrounds, or else you wouldn't have such big businesses in Little Meng City, but I think all of you should get your info right. Lord Puyang is far above you!"

Slapping the face of the crying tradesman, Liu Zhong snapped, "Get out, all of you, get the hell out of here! If you can't give me everything on this list in three days, I'll kill each and every single one of you!" The slap was so strong that it kocked the tradesman from where he was sitting and out of the hall. His head hit the floor and began to bleed.

No other tradesmen dared to say a word. One of them grabbed the scroll thrown out by Liu Zhong, then he followed the rest of tradesmen, bowed toward Liu Suifeng and left the hall. These tradesmen, who were normally at each other's throats, were actually showing each other a rare

show friendship. tThey didn't forget to carry out the fainted tradesman, who got slapped by Liu Zhong. Then they left the Mayor's Mansion in a group.

Wu Qi kept shaking his head while watching this. He had a good guess at what was written on the scroll.

Steal a fish hook and they would hang you. Steal an entire country and they would make you a prince! The greatest thieves in the world were still these men in positions of power! It was obvious that Liu Suifeng was blackmailing them, and what an awful way of asking for a bribe. But what could those tradesmen say?

Putting down the wine glass in his hand, Wu Qi rubbed his arms and stared at the arrogant Liu Zhong.

Lu Chengfeng placed his hand on the table, his eyes burning like torches. He gazed at Lu Quyuan in a speechless dismay.

Liu Suifeng's right-hand men also put down their glasses and chopsticks, and then leered at Zhang Hu and Hu Wei.

The awkward silence continued for almost fifteen minutes. Finally, Liu Suifeng spoke in a slow tone, "Lu Quhai, he was my best friend, a friend that I could die for. We even shared our concubines and serving ladies. Eight months ago, he and you, Lu Chengfeng, had a fight, and you purposely broke his left arm."

Lu Chengfeng replied with an indifferent voice, "Therefore, he sent

some assassins and tried to chop my left arm off?"

Lu Quyuan let out a bright smile, "Those men were not from second brother, they were from me. I sent those killers. Elder brother, you and second brother have the same mother, so he wouldn't dare to do that. It was I, your sixth brother, who was not satisfied with what you had done, so I sent a group of men, who belonged to grandfather, I just wanted to chop off the eft arm of elder brother, and we will have our score settled."

Lu Quyuan said like it was just some casual matter, but Wu Qi was shocked by what he had just heard. So this was the wealthy and influential families were really like? This was how a rich son behaved? Were they really brothers? There was such hatred between these two!

Lu Chengfeng glared at Lu Quyuan and, with a sneer, said, "That's the reason you came all the way here? You just wanted to abuse me a little more?"

Lu Quyuan burst out laughing, "Of course. Those fifty killers from grandfather were not easy to raise, and they required quite a large amount of money. None of them returned, and their wives and children are still being fed by my grandfather. The expenses are quite large. If I didn't find elder brother and release this stress by hurting him, I have trouble sleeping at night!"

Breathing out a long sigh, Lu Chengfeng spoke solemnly, "Sixth brother, do you really have to make things ugly?"

Lu Quyuan glared back at Lu Chengfeng and, with a strange laugh, said, "Definitely. We are not in Liyang now. No one would know what I've

done here. Therefore, why would I need to do things in your favor?"

Liu Suifeng sneered, "If Maiden Rongyang showed you the tiniest bit of care, both of us wouldn't dare to be this way. But, Maiden Rongyang never even took a second look at you, so don't blame us for being brutal."

Wu Qi breathed out a long sigh. Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan were so arrogant and lawless. Were all the sons from influential families like this? Or was it because of Wu Qi's ill fate that he had bumped into these two outrageous beings?

WU Qi stood up and held his fist, bowing to Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan, "Young masters, my master had been forced to live in Little Meng City, it was expected that he won't have a bright future. Why are you still trying to push him away? Do you really want to force him out of the Lu Kingdom?"

Lu Quyuan clapped his hand and burst out in laughter, he pointed at Lu Chengfeng and said, "Perfect, what he said was brilliant! Lu Chengfeng, if you chop off your left arm and move into Meng Mountain, we will stop abusing you! Meng Mountain covers an area of few thousand miles, and there are countless rare treasures within it. You could live a happy life there!"

Move to Meng Mountain? Lu Chengfeng's face darkened.

Indeed, there were countless rare treasures within Meng Mountain, but there were also countless barbarians residing near the base of the mountain. Ever since the Lu Kingdom was established, a few hundred years ago, and in the entirety of the two thousand over year history of the

Great Yan Dynasty, all those who were brave enough to move to Meng Mountain had perished. Asking Lu Chengfeng to move to Meng Mountain, this Lu Quyuan really was quite audacious.

Liu Suifeng grabbed a clay plate and threw it toward Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Chengfeng moved his body and evaded the plate, letting it fly past him and shatter on the floor.

Liu Suifeng sneered and said, “So be it. Either you chop off your left arm and move to Meng mountain, or we’ll ruin your future completely, having you as our toy for the rest of your life.”

“Hee, hee hee!”

Wu Qi let out a strange laugh, pulling Lu Chengfeng up and walking out of the hall.

Such a daring movement, it simply stunned Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan.

Liu Suifeng pointed at Wu Qi’s back and roared angrily, “Wu Qi, once we finish with Lu Chengfeng, you’ll be dead too!”

Wu Qi paused and turned his head back, waving his hand, “If you have the courage, why don’t you kill me now? Or, you could just get all of your men and kill my master now as well? Do you, have the courage?”

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan felt thier faces faces darken and they glared

at Wu Qi. The next second, the cushions underneath their butts were shattered into pieces by an invisible force.

[ED: Uh… What? Farts of anger? Qi farts? :P]

“This Wu Qi must die of an accident in the next three days!”

Lu Quyuan let out a stern humph.

Chapter 36 - Cultivator

Late in the evening, within the inner backyard of Lu Cengfeng's residence.

Steam was hovering within the bathroom, and a spacious stone pool was filled with hot water. Wu Qi was lying leisurely on a stone slab in the middle of the pool. Two serving ladies were rubbing his body with some silk cloths. The exhaustion within his body was being squeezed out, bit by bit, by the forceful rubs of the two serving ladies. It was so comfortable that Wu Qi almost fell asleep.

Lu Chengfeng was sitting at one side of the pool, only his head sticking out the hot water. His face had turned red, and sweat kept falling from the side of his face. Two serving ladies had their arms and legs tangled around his body, feeding him some refreshing rice wine with a jade wine pot.

Breathed out a sigh of relief, Lu Chengfeng narrowed his eyes and gazed at Wu Qi, "I'll be able to protect myself, as they don't have the guts to hurt me openly. After all, my mother, Maiden Liyang, is the Chief Lady of Lu Family right now. The only thing they can do is frame me or set me up. Even if the were to send some assassins to kill me, they won't do it while they are still in Little Meng City."

Drinking another glass of rice wine, Lu Chengfeng frowned and said, "But you have really offended that Marquis Liu. I'm afraid they will make you their first target."

Wu Qi let out a doubtful humph, and replied, with an indifferent tone, “Whatever happens, go with it. When they decided to take me as their first target, they should be prepared to be killed by me. If they were killed in Little Meng City, would it be a huge trouble?”

Lu Chengfeng raised his eyebrow, and scolded him with a deep voice, “Don’t mess with them. Those men beside Marquis Liu and Lu Quyuan are really strong. I could barely keep myself safe. If we really want to kill them, it would require a military mission involving all the City Guards. Although we have recruited twenty thousand soldiers, we are lacking in weapons and armor. Also, the new recruits are not fully loyal to me yet. I’ll need to work on them before they can be put to good use!”

Thinking for some time, Wu Qi breathed out a long sigh and said, “We’re still too weak. I have to find another way for us to get money. We’ll need to recruit more rogue hunters from other, more distant, places, and have them group into the City Guards.”

Lu Chengfeng remained silent. Was money really that easy to find?

As for recruiting more soldiers, Lu Chengfeng couldn’t agree more with the idea. But, there were merely two hundred thousand people in Little Meng City, and those twenty thousand new recruits included almost every single useful man within them. If they really wanted more soldiers, they would have to find them in other cities.

Reaching his hand over and grabbing on the serving lady’s butt, Lu Chengfeng pointed at two serving ladies beside Wu Qi and smiled, “These two girls now belong to you.”

Turning his head and looking at two serving ladies, who were rubbing his body, Wu Qi shook his head and said, “I’m underage. For me, it is too soon for this kind of thing! My teacher once told me, I can’t make love with any girl before adulthood, or else I will lose my pure Yang, and have trouble with my future cultivation!”

Standing up from the stone slab, Wu Qi grabbed a green robe beside the pool, and gazed at Lu Chengfeng, bursting out in a weird laugh, “Young master, enjoy your night with four queens! Turn your pressure into motivation. You’ll need to work hard tonight.”

Laughing out loud while avoided a jade wine pot thrown by Lu Chengfeng, Wu Qi put on the green robe and walked out of the bathroom.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan would make him their first target? Wu Qi sneered. He decided to find a way to let these two bastards ‘accidentally’ die outside Little Meng City!

Wu Qi walked to the empty courtyard, throwing an examining look around. With a leap, he hid himself under a shadow at the corner of the courtyard. Foggy water vapor spread out slowly, his body becoming twisted and fading under the cover of the water vapor. Wu Qi swiftly jumped over the wall, quickly moving around the familiar courtyard toward the place where Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyan were staying.

Along the way, he found that the guards of the Mayor’s Mansion had been chased away by Liu Suifeng’s personal guards, who were now patrolling in full suit armor and red war robe. On the high point of some of the walls, a few of Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan right-hand men were on guard, keeping surveillance on the perimeter and making sure no threats

approached.

Wu Qi could see those personal guards were carrying crossbows and bags of bolts on their back. When he took a closer look at the crossbows, he found out that they were the crossbows of the army of the Lu Kingdom. The very powerful nine arrow crossbow. This crossbow could fire nine pure steel bolts at the same time, potentially impaling heavy armor from two hundred feet away.

If all one thousand personal guards were equipped with this crossbow, if they fired at the same time, that would be a rain of nine thousand pure steel bolts. With the current strength of Little Meng Cities Guards, they would be defeated by just one round of this attack. It Look like Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan had really made a lot of preparations before they came here, not giving Lu Chengfeng even the slightest chance of counter-attacking.

“Marquis Liu really has a strong background!”

Wu Qi is lying flat on a rooftop of a building, staring greedily at the bags of bolts on these guards’ back. Little Meng City Guards only had one thousand crossbows, and they were single bolt crossbows. Comparing to these nine bolts crossbows, the amount of damage they could deal was disparagingly different.

Shaking his head, Wu Qi climbed down from a rooftop and sneaked into the courtyard, covering himself with the shadow of the corner of a wall. He ventured deeper into the courtyard. From afar, he could hear the wild laughter of Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan, along with the sound of a girl crying.

At this moment, both of them were occupying the deepest inner courtyard of this part of the General's residence. A room at the north side of the courtyard had all its door and windows wide open, and candle light was illuminating the room brightly. An almost naked teenage girl was crying while being squeezed in the middle by both men, she was being torturing by them.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan were laughing in joy. They were scratching and biting this poor girl's body. Especially Lu Quyuan, he was sticking out his tongue and licking her face, smearing his saliva everywhere. He looked just like a mad stray dog.

Wu Qi was hiding within a bush, staring at the two insane men.

The clothes on this poor girl were made from rough weeds, not those fine silks worn by their serving ladies. While she was crying for her parents, Wu Qi could recognize her accent was from Little Meng City, very different from the soft and gentle official language spoken by their serving ladies. The poor girl must have been abducted from the street when they came into Little Meng City.

Wu Qi glared cruelly at two men. He had decided what their fate would be. No matter whether it was their malicious intention toward Wu Qi, or their evil doing tonight, Wu Qi was determined to send them to the deepest depths of hell to have their sins cleansed while burning in hellfire.

Taking a last look at both men, who were laughing out loud, Wu Qi then threw an examining look around and checked the surroundings.

There was a faded energy ripple coming out from a room to the west. The door and windows were tightly shut, but Wu Qi could still hear a subtle crying and begging noise of a teenage girl coming out from it. Soon, the girl's life force became weaker and weaker, and her voice was also becoming lower and lower. On the opposite side, the energy ripple had become stronger. Eventually, it became like a powerful sword that was drawn out from its scabbard, projecting a sky-piercing energy.

With some cracking sounds, some roof tiles were launched high into sky by the piercing energy, shooting away, like arrows. The next second, the door was opened and a long bearded old man wearing a red robe walked slowly out.

Letting out a mild cough, the old man extended his arm and grabbed something behind him. A naked girl then flew out from the room, being thrown onto the floor. Her privates were a mess, and her skin was so pale that it could frighten anyone looking at her. She was skinny, and her skin was loose, as if all her blood had been sucked out.

"Somebody, take this bitch away!" The old man in red humphed and said, "Next time, bring me those bright girls who can understand my words. Bitch, you dared to bite me? Hmm! Where did you guys find her? Send someone and kill her entire family. You dared to bite me? Now your family pays for your actions!"

A few fully armored guards quickly run up, grabbing the dead body and dragging it out of the courtyard.

The old man in red twisted his lips, the he glanced around and then

rubbed his crotch a few times. Clenching his teeth tightly, the old man cursed, “How dare you bite me. Fuck!”

The door opposite from the one the old man had just left opened up. An old man wearing white robe with flaming symbols stitched on it came out from the room. He took a deep breath, and stared at old man in red, sneering, “Old Devil, it was cruel enough for you to kill the girl, now you even want to kill all her family. Aren’t you worried you will be struck by lightning for all these sins?”

The old man in red, Old Devil, let out a strange laugh. Then he raised his head and sneeredm saying, “Making love is a natural order. But you, Lord Flame, by absorbing the Yang energy from young boys as a supplement, you need to kill at least a hundred kids each year. Your sins are not any less than mine. Don’t you agree?”

Both old men were disagreeable to each other, staring at each other like two fighting dogs. They started to curse each other like there was no tomorrow.

A light bulb lit in Wu Qi’s head. By using trees and bushes as cover, Wu Qi moved silently to a back window of the East side room. Then he pulled out his low level magical dagger and cut the lock on the window. He swiftly slipped into the room. Wu Qi took a quick glance and, with lightning speed, grabbed a red bag hanging on the side of bed and left the room immediately.

The bag was unleashing a subtle energy ripple. According to Scroll of Stealing, this was a unique energy ripple that belonged to a magical storage item. Wu Qi focused his mind and took a look inside of the bag. He found that there was storage space equal to the space of three normal

rooms. It was a low level magical storage bag. Precious but not rare.

There was a small pile of red energy stones lying within, along with a few talismans and a red longsword. Besides these items, there were also a few clothes and dozens of boxes of gold, silver, and jewelry.

After Wu Qi had stolen the magical storage bag of Lord Flame, he then sneaked his way to the West side room, and also stole the magical storage bag of Old Devil. Then, at full speed, he left the courtyard. With his speed, he had soon caught up with those guards who were dragging the dead body of that poor girl and walking out of the Mayor's Mansion.

Simply grabbing a cloth and covering his face, Wu Qi followed these guards and left the Mayor's Mansion, walking toward the South side of Little Meng City.

Not long after that, two strong energies shot up into the sky. There was even a fireball that flared up from the courtyard.

The angry roar of 'Lord Flame' resounded within Little Meng City, "Outrageous! How dare you steal my treasures! You...! Damn you, I'll burn you into ashes!"

The ear-splitting scream of 'Old Devil' could be heard at the same time, "It was all my belongings! I spent nearly a hundred years saving that up! Damn thief! A thousand curses upon you!"

When Wu Qi heard the screaming of both of the old men, he sneered, but remained silent. He continued to follow behind those guards.

Chapter 37 - Sudden News

The night was dark, so when these few personal guards of Liu Suifeng were about to break into a house, Wu Qi sprinted forward quietly and effortlessly broke their necks. The sound of their bones cracking was nothing compared to the crazy howling of Old Devil and Lord Flame. Wu Qi carefully dragged their bodies over to, and dumped them into, a water channel right beside the street.

Two figures, who were flying in the air, flew past, kicking up a wild wind. A large group of Liu Suifeng's guards were riding their horses and following behind them. The two figures were Old Devil and Lord Flame, and they were rushing toward the City Gate. Soon, the clattering of the horses came and passed, as the guards were following behind those two flying figures toward the only gate that connected Little Meng City to the outside world at night.

Wu Qi nodded his head, adjusted his face mask, turned around, and walked into the house.

Noon, the next day.

Wu Qi and LU Chengfeng were sitting in a private room within the Green Mountain Restaurant, both looking at the empty street happily.

Last night, Wu Qi had stolen the magical storage bags of Old Devil and Lord Flame, then he killed a few of Liu Suifeng's personal guards and dumped their bodies in a water channel. With so many incidents

happening in one night, Liu Suifeng and his men were pissed.

Old Devil and Lord Flame were boiling in anger, so they led a large group of men and shut all four City Gates of Little Meng City, commencing a search operation throughout the city. They were determined to catch that thief who had stolen all their belongings, swearing that they would skin him alive and kill him with a thousand slashes.

Liu Suifeng was also boiling in anger, due to having a few of his personal guards killed. He used the authority of Military Supervisory Officer and imposed a city-wide curfew with all City Guards, no civilians were allowed to leave their home. They took turns having their homes searched, one by one. All shops were forced to close, and Little Meng City had turned into a lifeless ghost town.

Taking a large gulp of a glass of wine, Wu Qi narrowed his eyes and smiled, “I suppose that stray dogs who get their tails burned, would react like this. Don’t you think so?”

Lu Chengfeng was laughing in joy. He picked up a piece of fat deer meat and placed it into his mouth. Then, speaking slowly, he said, “Marquis Liu went too far this time. The news of him blackmailing those tradesmen, I bet it has been heard about by someone in the capital by now. There are a few tradesmen here with very powerful backgrounds. I don’t think they were expecting that.”

Lu Chengfeng leaned against window frame leisurely, watching at those guards wearing red war robes storming in and out of townhouses. Sneering, he said, “They are just a bunch of fools. Although Little Meng City is a remote city, do they not realize how many benefits Little Meng

City gives those princes and lords each year? The rare treasures produced here in Little Meng City and then sent to the capital... they have to value at least a million gold a year!”

Wu Qi nodded his head, agreeing. He didn’t add on anything, but just pour Lu Chengfeng another glass of wine.

By acting so lawless, Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan had infringed on the benefits of many powerful men. By imposing a curfew in Little Meng City and searching for a thief, many business activities were completely stopped as well. Let’s see who would come and give Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan trouble for holding down the activities that produced million gold each year. A lack of profit was sure to draw the eyes of some powerful people.

The evils that one brought on themselves were the hardest to bear! Wu Qi raised his wineglass up and bid a toast with Lu Chengfeng. Both men drank their full glasses of wine at the same time.

Breathing out a sigh, Lu Chengfeng stared right into Wu Qi’s eyes and asked, “Those two magical storage bags, are you the one who took them? Those two old devils are Xiantian level cultivators, possessing a strong cultivation and sensitive senses. How did you manage that?”

Wu Qi kept smiling and stared back at Lu Chengfeng. He nodded his head seriously and shook his head, “I didn’t do it. My teacher had very strict rules for us, never allowing his disciple to steal anything.”

Lu Chengfeng stared at Wu Qi and became speechless, he just wished he could slap Wu Qi’s smile right off his face.

Rolling his eyes, Lu Chengfeng sneered and said, “If I told you, ‘I’m still a virgin’, would you believe it?”

Wu Qi stared into Lu Chengfeng’s eyes seriously and, with an absolutely confident tone, said, “I would believe it!”

Lu Chengfeng’s hands were trembling. He had met all different kinds of people, but this was the first time he had met someone as shameless as Wu Qi. Grabbing a wine pot and pouring himself some more wine, Lu Chengfeng quickly drank three glasses of wine, back to back, and finally breathed out a long sigh.

All of a sudden, rapid footsteps came from outside the private room. Xiaohei, who was standing guard outside, shouted, “Who dares to come in here without permission?”

The sound of a body being slammed against a wall was heard, in the next second, Xiaohei staggered back into the private room, followed by a few right-hand men of Liu Suifeng. One of them gazed arrogantly at Lu Chengfeng, smiled condescendingly, and said, “Acting-Mayor, our Marquis requests your presence at the General’s Office. From today onwards, our Marquis will commence the audit and review of all military related affairs. Your presence, as you are the Acting-Mayor, is a must.”

Wu Qi stood up slowly and looked at Xiaohei. He found his face was pale. Obviously, he had suffered a quick defeat in that fight just now. Putting on a proud smile, Wu Qi humphed coldly and said, “I thought the Marquis was busy catching some thieves today and had no time for his job?”

These few right-hand men of Liu Suifeng had their faces darken. They gazed at Wu Qi with insidious looks. One of them sneered and said, “Under the management of the two of you, Little Meng City has become a place where people can live and work happily, and thus business could commence in peace. What happened last night, both of you will need to provide an answer to our Marquis!”

Lu Chengfeng rubbed his butt and stood up,gazing at these men with a look hundred times more arrogant than theirs. He sneered in disdain, “Answer? What kind of answer? The ones who were on the night watch were all the personal guards of your Marquis. The guards of the Mayor’s Mansion had long since been chased off by them, so how does this have anything to do with me?”

Not even taking a second look at those men, Lu Chengfeng raised his head up and walked out of the private room.

Wu Qi gave these men a smile, patted on Xiaohei’s shoulder, and carried him out the Green Mountain Restaurant.

The angry and frantic howling of Old Devil and Lord Flame could still be heard from afar. They were shouting and ordering someone to dig three feet down under a townhouse. It was a huge blow to both of them that their magical storage bags had been stolen. They had no choice but to desperately search for their belongings. But only Wu Qi knew that both magical storage bags had been hidden at a secret place outside of the city. How could they find anything by searching the city?

The two old devils were at fault for having too much confidence in their

judgement. Once they found out that their magical storage bags had been stolen, they immediately collected some men and sealed the only road connecting Little Meng City to the outside world. their believe that the thief was still hiding somewhere in the city was why they were creating such a huge disturbance right now.

It was too bad that they had no idea that the thief who had stolen their belongings was right next to them. They also never thought that a thief that could steal their magical storage bags from right under their noses. How could such a thief be blocked by simply sealing a road?

A wild wind blew past in the sky above. Old Devil, who was in his red robe, jumped across the street while clenching his teeth tightly, acted like a lunatic, and pointed at a caravan sitting at the side of the road, he roared loudly and said, “My treasures must be hiding in this caravan, search it, you all must help me get my treasures back!”

Wu Qi shook his head, letting out a laugh of disdain. By searching like this, he would never find his magical storage bag.

But once Wu Qi entered the General’s Office, his pleasant mood quickly disappeared.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan had brought a group of men in green robes here. They were currently moving countless documents and records of General Office, checking each word by word, line by line. These green robe men were the senior auditors that Liu Suifeng had brought from home. They were very well versed in all accounting matters.

Dozens of account books had been put on a long table, and Lu Quyuan

was standing beside the table, flipping through and reading these books, his face covered with a gloating sneer.

"Right here, there are three hundred sets of full black steel armor that are missing."

"Here, there are fifty strong bows missing."

"Wow, this is getting serious. Marching Pills, Remedy Pills, and six other commonly used pills in army, there are fifteen thousand portions of these missing."

"Tsk tsk, two years ago, of the building expenses used to build the new drill ground and camps, three thousand silver coins were not recorded in the account books."

"Outrageous, in this record, due to barbarians attacking, seven hundred and ninety elite soldiers were killed, the same numbers of compensations were given out too, but the salary for these soldiers was still being counted as being used, and, at the same time, the extra funds were used to recruit new soldiers!"

Many of these records were babbled out continuously, each of the transactions was so ridiculous and could have been easily spotted. Even without these senior auditors, anyone could realized that there was a huge black hole in the accounts of the General's Office of Little Meng City.

When Lu Quyuan saw Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng walking into the General's Office, he raised up his head and let out an evil laugh, "Elder

brother, there is a big problem with your account, the amount of misappropriation and false expenses involved here, totaling to a huge figure!"

Wu Qi took a few steps forward, glared at Lu Quyuan and shouted, "Look carefully. Those account books were recorded during the period when that damn fatty, Yi Yan, was the Mayor. Our account books are only a few months old!"

An insidious smile appeared on one side of Lu Quyuan's lips. He said, "That's really hard to tell. The previous Mayor was a corrupt person, however I don't think the current one is any different. All this missing money. Hee hee, elder brother, somehow you'll take the blame for this... Right?"

Lu Quyuan spoke with a frivolous tone, trying to put the blame on Lu Chengfeng. Lu Chengfeng never responded to his question. He just placed both of his hands on his back and kept sneering.

On the other side, Liu Suifeng was pushing those auditors to hurry up and go through all the new account books done by Wu Qi. No matter what, he had to find something in them. With this, he could step on Lu Chengfeng's head and ruin what little face he had, making him never able to come back.

Wu Qi also placed his hands on his back, glaring at Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan. He had made up his mind, he would definitely arrange for these two men to go have some fun with those barbarians.

Time passed, and soon it was evening. Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng were

still casually standing in the hall, but those auditors started to look tired, and had sweat all over their faces.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan kept impatiently pushing them, urging these auditors to find more loopholes in the accounts.

Just as these two men were shouting and yelling, a hasty series of footsteps approached from the outside. A man wearing black soft leather armor, and a long sword on his back, walked into General's Office at a fast pace. He was holding a golden token high up in his hand. Behind this man, dozens of Liu Suifeng's personal guards were following closely behind, but none dared to stop the man.

"I'm Yan Bugui, Scouting Officer under the command of Lord Jing Ke, the Chief General of the Great Yan Dynasty. By the martial law of the Great Yan Dynasty, all mid-level practitioners in Little Meng City are required to join the army and wait on my command."

Great Yan Dynasty, Chief General, Jing Ke!

Wu Qi's eyes twitched.

Chapter 38 - Travel Together

Two thousand years ago, the founding emperor of the Great Yan Dynasty, Zedan, also known as Lord Yan Dan, suddenly appeared in the world with dozens of his right-hand men and tens of thousands of his people.

At that time, within the land now known as the Great Yan Dynasty, countless barbarians and wild beasts roamed the land. Foul ghosts and cruel demons were fighting and battling each other in broad daylight. Yan Dan remained dormant for hundreds of years, then struck when the time was right, expelling the barbarians, killing the wild beasts, and slaughtering the foul ghosts and demons. He then built a city called 'Ji' City, establishing strong foundations for what would later become the Great Yan Dynasty.

Two thousand years later, the Great Yan Dynasty had become prosperous and developed into an advanced civilization, ruling a land of more than few hundred miles in circumference, and having millions of peoples. Under the roof of the Great Yan Dynasty, there were even few hundred kingdoms ruled by the royal family members and ministers, cities that had yet to become a kingdom totaled to few thousand, the land that ruled by Great Yan Dynasty was so huge, it would take three months of restless riding to cross from one side to the other.

Since the establishment of the Great Yan Dynasty, the emperor has always been Emperor Yan Dan.

The Admiral General Jing Ke is one of the most influential people in the

Great Yan Dynasty's military, and one of Emperor Yan Dan's most trusted men. Scouting Officers were from a special agent institute that was solely controlled by Jing Ke. They were this world's equivalent of spies.

The most important tasks for these Scouting Officers, aside from studying people's lives, were keeping an eye on business activities and closely watching all the lords and the royal family members. They were also known for making expeditions deep into the mountains, either in search of natural resources or spying on the activities of barbarians. They even performed some secretive missions, the likes of which most people can't even guess.

Scouting Officers had a very high power in the Great Yan Dynasty. Not including the Great Yan Dynasty itself, even all the kings of various kingdoms were ranked lower than these Scouting Officers. When they were in the presence of a Scouting Officer, these kings would treat them with the utmost respect and do whatever they could to complete any orders the came from the Scouting Officer.

This was Lu Chengfeng's quick explanation to Wu Qi on what Scouting Officers were.

Wu Qi became dizzy when he heard this explanation. His heart started pounding fast. Was this a coincidence? No...? Yes...? Maybe...? [1]

Yan Dan, Jin Ke, and Ji City!

Wu Qi not only was his heart pounding, he also felt that his hands and legs were trembling. With a smile on his face, he stared at Lu Chengfeng and asked, in a soft voice, "Then, how about Gao Jianli?"

Lu Chengfeng lowered his voice and carefully said, “Gao Jianli? He is the Chief Prime Minister of the Great Yan Dynasty, who manages the overall matters of the Great Yan Dynasty!”

A tingling feeling, like a small buzz of electricity, spread from Wu Qi’s tailbone up to his head. Wu Qi stared at Lu Chengfeng with his eyes glowing bright, “That would make them over two thousand years old!” He tried to calculate in his mind the time since the end of Warring States Period [2] until now. It had really been more than two thousand years!

Lu Chengfeng gave Wu Qi a smile and said, “They are all men with incredible cultivations, what’s so surprising about living for more than two thousand years?”

While both men were whispering, Yan Bugui had let Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan examine his golden token. It was authentic. The duo instantly put bright smiles on their faces, bowing and nodding their heads eagerly, trying to do everything they could to earn Yan Bugui favor. At the same time, they were swearing that they would do whatever they could to help Yan Bugui accomplish his mission.

The Lu Kingdom was the youngest kingdom in the Great Yan Dynasty, and its national strength was ranked at the bottom, which meant it was a really tiny kingdom. The king of the Lu Kingdom had only been honored with the title of viscount. A slightly decorated Scouting Officer could have a similar title to the king of the Lu Kingdom. Therefore, was there any reason for Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan not to flatter this man?

However, Yan Bugui only gave them a cold shoulder. He gazed at

everyone in the General's Office and, with a stern voice, said, "Since my identity had been proven, I want all those who are at the strength of a mid-level practitioners or above in Little Meng City to gather and follow me. Those who disobey this command will be killed!"

Pausing for a moment, Yan Bugui continued and said, "The mission I'm on is very crucial, I don't have time to get more men from Ji City. If you can work together with us and accomplish the mission, I'll have you reward handsomely."

Not only LiuSuifeng and Lu Quyuan, even Lu Cengfeng's eyes immediately brightened at this prospect.

When a Scouting Officer said 'handsome reward', that must be a truely massive reward. The national strength of the Lu Kingdom and the strength of the Great Yan Dynasty were incredibly far apart. A tiny little bit of credit given by this Scouting Officer would be more than enough for an ordinary civilian to be honored with a title. If one had a good connection with a Scouting Officer, you would probably be moving up in the world.

Immediately, Lu Chengfeng grabbed Wu Qi and sprinted out of the Mayor's Mansion, beginning to recruit all the mid-level, and above, practitioners. The name of the Scouting Officer was really powerful. Lu Chengfeng just stood right in the middle of the street and shouted a few times and soon there were nearly a hundred mid-level above practitioners expressing their willingness to join.

The people of Little Meng City were pretty intrepid, as those who came here to earn their living were either those who had committed some crimes, or those barbarian hunters and wandering rogues who risked

their lives to make a living. These people worked so hard and struggled for their entire life. After all, they just want to put food on their table and have an enjoyable life. Now, with the promise of the Scouting Officer, just for the reward itself, they were more than happy to join the expedition.

Soon the news had spread across Little Meng City. Even those guards who worked as escorts for caravans were rushing to the Mayor's Mansion to join Lu Chengfeng's team. In just fifteen minutes,nearly a thousand mid-level and above practitioners had joined Lu Chengfeng. Among these men, at least thirty of them were peak Houtian practitioners.

Wu Qi stared at these men in shock. He never expected that there were so many strong men in Little Meng City.

Liu Suifeng also sent someone to get Old Devil and Lord Flame to come back. When the two old devils heard that a Scouting Officer was requesting their help, they immediately forgot their magical storage bags and rushed back, bright smiles on their faces, fearing that they would miss a great opportunity if they didn't.

Both of them were cultivators at the Embryonic Breath tier of the Xiantian level. A Scouting Officer would give them different rewards than what they would give to ordinary warriors. If they could work together with Yan Bugui and help him accomplish his mission perfectly, their lost items were nothing compared to what they might get.

Among all the right-hand men that Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan brought together, twenty-one of them were peak Houtian practitioners and nearly two hundred were mid-level practitioners or stronger. Together with Old Devil and Lord Flame, who had achieved the Embryonic Breath tier, which was the peak of the Xiantian level, their strength was considerable.

Yan Bugui was very satisfied with the men that were gathered by Liu Suifeng and Lu Chengfeng. He did some calculations in his mind and nodded his head, “Over a thousand men, that’s enough. Open up the military equipment storehouse and equip everyone with leather armor. Also, giave them all the pills they will need. Hurry, move now!”

In less than fifteen minutes, the whole group of people had left Little Meng City and were now riding on Raptors toward Meng Mountain.

It all happened so quickly that Lu Chengfeng only had a short time to give some orders to Laohei and Xiaohei, then he was forced to leave with the group. Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan also gave some orders to their men, in a secretive and suspicious manner, then they left the city happily with insidious smiles on their faces.

Wu Qi pulled over Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Hu, and Hu Wei and stayed at the back of the group, whispering to each other, as if they were discussing something important.

Listening to what Wu Qi said, the other three nodded their heads in agreeance.

Wu Qi was analyzing the composition of this temporary army, the personal guards of Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan was a group of united elite soldiers, they were one group. Wu Qi, Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Wu and Hu Wei was another group with a close relationship. As for those those thousand newly recruit warriors from Little Ment City, there might be someone suspicious mixed within them.

The situation in the depths of the mountain was very complicated and dangerous, Wu Qi reminded Lu Chengfeng and the other three to be extra cautious and to try their best to keep a longer distance with Yan Bugui, and to also keep a distance from the rest of the men. When Yan Bugui's target was found they would need to be very careful not to take any unnecessary risks.

Especially for Lu Chengfeng. Although he had a pretty good cultivation, and he owned a formation that could protect him when needed, but he was from a wealthy family after all, and this vast forest was a hundred times more dangerous for him than it was to Wu Qi and the others. Zhang Wu was a barbarian hunter, he earned his living by venturing in and out of mountains, he could protect himself. Hu Wei was the leader of some elite soldiers. His familiarity toward this mountain and forest was not any weaker than Zhang Hu. He would be able to protect himself too.

Wu Qi had inherited all the experiences and knowledge from Wu Wang. To him, these mountains and forest were like his second home.

Therefore, only Lu Chengfeng had no familiarity with this situation. A tiny blade of grass or a bug that he unintentionally touched, might just get him killed in an instant.

Lu Chengfeng nodded his head, with a dignified expression on his face. Zhang Hu and Hu Wei looked at each other, then separated and walked to Lu Chengfeng's left and right side. Wu Qi was riding in front of them, but was behind the main group. They had just formed up into a triangular defensive formation to protect Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Chengfeng took a deep breath to calm his nerves, then he, carefully, took out three formation pillars from his bag and pulled out the energy

stones in them, replacing them with a few middle tier energy stones Wu Qi gave him some time ago.

Yan Bugui was leading the army from the front, quickly leading them down the road that lead them to Meng Village.

About ten miles before Meng Village, Yan Bugui gave a command and got off his ride. Everybody followed in suit and got off from their rides while Yan Buguo made a few insect-liked sound with his lip.

A few black figures silently dashed out from the woods. These men were wearing the same attire as Yan Bugui. One of them, with a deep voice, asked, “Sir, you only brought these people?”

Yan Bugui affirmed his question, then he turned around and shouted with a stern voice, “After we enter the mountain, no one is allowed to create a disturbance. No questions, no talkings, no coughing, no farting, no swallowing saliva. In short, treat yourself like a dead man. Be silent. Those who disobey this will be killed!”

An awkward silence covered the whole army, and no one dared to question the death threat from the Scouting Officer.

Yan Bugui let out a cold humph and quickly gave out his commands. He divided this group of over a thousand men into five teams, lead by him and the other four Scouting Officers respectively. Then they silently ventured into woods.

The personal guards of Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan were the most

organized and elite group, Yan Bugui had them grouped into his team. He also ordered Lu Chengfeng and Wu Qi's team to group under his team as well.

Not including Yan Bugui, the rest of the team were all Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan's men.

Wu Qi's face darkened, but the duo was smiling gleefully at their backs.

The darkness of the night had covered Meng Mountain, and a faded black fog had begun to roll out through the woods. Wu Qi suddenly had a feeling that a lot of people would die on this expedition.

Notes:

[1] The reason Wu Qi behaved like this is because all the name of emperor, city and general were real history in the world he came from (or, our world).

[2] Warring State Period - 5th century BC - 221 BC

Chapter 39 - The Forest

It has been three days since they entered the forest.

In high spirits, Wu Qi was standing on a tree branch that was nearly a thousand feet above the ground, looking out at the dark green deep forest that extended out for miles and miles. Faded water vapor was hovering around his body, isolating himself from all the dust and tiny little bugs in the forest. The long robe he was wearing when he entered the forest was still perfectly clean.

Under a huge tree entwined with wisteria, Liu Suifeng was staring blankly at a dead guard whose body had turned black.

A moment before this, Liu Suifeng had wanted to drink some water, so he ordered this guard to get his water sack filled at a stream a thousand feet away. A colorful, thumb-sized frog with small bumps on its head struck when this guard bent over to get some water. This tiny frog jumped out from the water and spit out a faded black mist toward the guard, making this guard, who had a peak Houtian cultivation level, scream and fall to the ground.

Before Liu Suifeng and few other men could rush to this guard and feed him an antidote, the guard had died from the poison. The tiny colorful frog jumped back into the water, its eyes gazing at Liu Suifeng. In the end, it was smashed into pieces on Liu Suifeng’s order.

In just these past three days, Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan had lost more

than thirty elite guards, who all got themselves killed by rather baffling accidents. Liu Suifeng was bleeding in his heart, because these guards were personal guards for his father, Lord Puyang, which he had borrowed in order to deal with Lu Chengfeng. It had taken a lot of work to get his father to lend them to him!

A guard standing beside Lu Quyuan was so exasperated that he kicked a short bush beside him and cursed angrily, “This damn forest!”

Suddenly, a tiny long green snake darted from the bush. It was five feet long, but had an abnormal head, which was the size of a baby’s fist. The snake darted out silently, raised its head and bit on the leg of this guard. A painful howl resounded within the forest as the guard jumped up and down three times. Then his face turned green. A second later, some bright green colored blood started to flow out from his seven apertures, and then he was down on the ground.

The snake made a terrifying hissing sound, and then darted straight toward Li Quyuan. A few of the nearby guards immediately rushed in while yelling out, hitting and chopping at the snake with their weapons. Green colored snake blood spilled out as it was chopped into over thirty pieces. Right when these guards started to relax and breath out sighs of relief, the snake’s head suddenly leaped forward and bit the leg of the closest guard.

Another painful howl, another casualty.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan were now constantly trembling in fear. As the rich sons from influential families, when had they ever encountered wild beasts like these?

Yan Bugui was sitting on a trunk and munching on a wild fruit, then he dug a hole on the ground with his finger, buried the core within and covered it with dirt and some mosses carefully. Done with that, he walked in front of Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan, warning the duo with an indifferent expression, “If your guards keep yelling out loud before they die, I’ll report this to the Admiral General, and have him strip you of all your future honors!”

Gazing at the duo with a stern look, Yan Bugui pointed at Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Hu, and Hu Wei, who were sitting under a tree and munching on some wild fruits. With a cold voice, he said, “Learn from them. If you want to stay alive in this forest, get rid of your attitude of being a rich son from an influential family!”

The arrogant Liu Suifeng didn’t even dare to stare back at Yan Bugui. He just lowered his head and made a little bow, agreeing to Yan Bugui’s order with an embarrassed smile.

A moment later, all guards of the duo had their mouths filled with wild cherries found by Yan Bugui. He didn’t remove the skin of these berries on purpose, and the greenish flesh and thick juices had filled these guards’ mouths, soaking their tongues and making them become numb. Right now, even if they were cut by a blade, they wouldn’t be able to make any noise.

Kicked on a guard’s butt forcefully, Yan Bugui was satisfied when he saw the guard could only open his mouth wide without making any noise, he nodded his head and said, “We should do this earlier. We are getting closer to our target, don’t make any noise, or else, use your brain and think what would be the consequences!”

Liu Suifeng and his men found an open space within the forest and sat down gloomily, behaved like a rooster just defeated by its opponent, their arrogant and pride had gone completely. Even Old Devil and Lord Flame had become distraught and haggard, the level of frightful in this forest was was beyond their expectation.

After watching a good show, Wu Qi let out a silent laugh and continued climbing up the tall tree. This was a huge old tree, and it had a thick twining wisteria on its trunk that extended all the way down to the ground. Wu Qi was searching around on the trunk, and, after a while, he finally found what he was looking for, a few bunches of green 'Wisteria Fruit', which gave off a delicate fragrance.

Wisteria fruit. It would only grow on those wisterias that were more than a hundred years old. It was good in soothing one's mind and increasing one's internal energy slightly. The best benefit of it was as the remedy for all kind of poisonous miasma and bugs. After consuming it, one would be immune to those common poisonous beings within the forest.

Plucked two bunches of wisteria fruit and climbing down from the tree, Wu Qi walked up to Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Wu, and Hu Wei and gave each of them a few of the fruits.

Lu Chengfeng had no idea what a wisteria fruit was and Hu Wei seemed to know little about it, but Zhang Hu had his eyes brighten when he saw them, and gave Wu Qi a big thumbs up, saying, "This is good stuff! With this fruit we will have a better chance of surviving this forest. But, although this stuff is not rare, it was not that easy to find. How did you found them?"

Wu Qi didn't say anything but just replied with a smile. There was mist everywhere in this forest, especially where those thick mosses grew on the tree trunks. This mist contained a huge amount of water energy within it. After cultivating in the Source of Water Chapter, Wu Qi's senses had become three times stronger in this forest. Although the fragrance of wisteria fruits could barely be smelt, for him, he could smell them from a hundred feet away.

After hearing the benefits of wisteria fruits, Lu Chengfeng was delighted. He quickly grabbed a fruit and put in his mouth.

Yan Bugui was surprised when he saw the wisteria fruits in Wu Qi's hand. He walked over to Wu Qi, squatted down, and stared at the fruits for some time. Then, with an amazed expression, he said, "These really are wisteria fruits. How did you found them? These will become rotten seven days after being plucked, each of you keep seven of them and give me the rest."

Wu Qi stared at Yan Bugui with a smile, he asked, "Sir Yan, if I give you these wisteria fruits can I get some extra credit for this mission?"

Yan Bugui remained silent for a short moment, then he turned his head and looked at those peoples who were sitting on the ground, with an indifferent tone he said, "If you could give each of them seven fruits each, I'll give mister Lu a great merit for this mission."

Wu Qi twisted his lips and then placed the two bunches of wisteria fruits in Yan Bugui's hand and said, "There are no more. You think this stuff is as common as clumps of dirt? This isn't available everywhere!

Hmm, I don't want any credit or merit, just let all of them die in this forest!"

Yan Bugui grabbed the fruits and gave Wu Qi a fierce stare, then he turned around and walked over to Liu Suifeng and his men, giving all the fruits to them.

There were only around forty fruits on these two bunches,and Wu Qi's group of four had taken seven each, so there was not many left. After Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan heard about the benefits of this fruit, they immediately shared it with Old Devil and Lord Flame. As for their guards? They didn't get any.

Those guards could only stare at the wisteria fruits with mixed emotions.

Wu Qi looked at those guards expressions and smiled. He knew Liu Suifeng and his gang pretty well. They would never share this precious life-saving fruits with their subordinates. "There are enough things in this world for everyone, it just a matter of fairness!" Wu Qi muttered to himself.

Lu Chengfeng had a smile on his face too, and he looked at Lu Quyuan happily, holding his fists outtoward Lu Quyuan from afar.

Lu Quyuan gazed at Lu Chengfeng with a cruel look, as if he was looking at a dead man. Lu Chengfeng believed that if Yan Bugui wasn't here, Lu Quyuan would have already ordered his guards to chopped him into meat paste. In the depths of this forest, where nobody really came, it was a perfect place to kill someone.

But, with the presence of Yan Bugui, they simply didn't have the guts to do so.

After some rest, Yan Bugui took the lead and began to venture deeper into the forest. Step by step, they continues on into the forest, deeper than even Zhang Hu dared to go when he was still a barbarian hunter. No one who had come out this far ever returned.

Maybe, these Scouting Officers were an exception?

Wu Qi was looking at Yan Bugui's back. His movements were those of an expert and he was familiar with the path. Obviously he had come here more than once. This made him wonder what they were actually here for?

Wu Qi could barely feel any movements in the surrounding area. The other four groups were traveling parallel with Wu Qi's group. The distance between them varied from a few miles to tens of miles. There were a few times that Wu Qi could saw the other group when he stood high up on some cliff.

After another two weeks of expeditioning into the deep forest, Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan had lost another thirty guards. Now, they had around a hundred and thirty guards left, both of them had their face turning darker and darker. On the other side, not a single person in Wu Qi's group was hurt, with Wu Qi and Zhang Hu both experts in wildlife survival, their ability to adapt in this forest was so much stronger than Liu Suifeng's group.

When Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan began to diarrhea continuously, due

to some unknown reasons, they had finally come to a river that flowed across the forest.

After going through the dark woods, they came to an open space where a few mile wide river was presented in front of them. The river was pretty deep and the water's flow was fast. The water rolled endlessly and waved toward East, but it was as quiet as a mouse.

On the shoal of the river, chunks of gold nuggets and gold sand were piling up in a messy manner. Making a rough calculation by looking at them, this gold worth at least a few million gold coins.

Except for Yan Bugui, everyone was attracted by this huge amount of gold, and sounds of gasps could be heard everywhere.

Standing on the shoal, Yan Bugui was carefully examining the surrounding area, then he whistled a few times. The whistle sound was not loud, but it was able to get past the strong breeze created by the rolling water and reached to the opposite of river. On the other side of the river, a few barely visible black figures appeared. They seemed to be moving something and a few moments later, a meter wide tree vine emerged from underneath the water. It was a temporary bridge that allowed these people to cross the river.

"Follow me closely! Be careful and don't fall into the river, or else you'll face certain death."

Yan Bugui let out a cold humph, again taking the lead, and stepped onto the tree vine, quickly crossing the river.

Wu Qi pulled Lu Chengfeng back and waited for Liu Suifeng and his men crossed the river first. Only then did they begin to cross the river.

The black figures across the river were seven young men, who were in the same uniform as Yan Bugui. However, they looked ragged and distraught, almost like they were savages. When they saw Yan Bugui, the seven young men immediately saluted and made some hand gestures that Wu Qi couldn't understand.

Yan Bugui nodded his head. With a low voice, he said, "Ten miles in front of us there is a small barbarian village. Don't let anyone escape from it."

Liu Suifeng, who felt weak all over because of his diarrhea, had his eyes brighten immediately, "Are there any barbarian girls?"

Yan Bugui glared at Liu Suifeng. With an indifferent tone, he said, "There are, I can give you all fifteen minutes for that."

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan looked at each other and immediately turned around and readied all their men, sprinting off in that direction.

Wu Qi sneered. He and Lu Chengfeng just stood beside Yan Bugui.

Chapter 40 - Beast Warrior

The evening was closing down tranquility, Wu Qi lie on his stomach on a huge tree and overlooking ahead, few miles away from him was an open space surrounded by trees, it was a small barbarian village.

A fence made of thick wooden stakes surrounded the village and formed a wall. behind the fence were nearly a hundred wooden houses with weed rooftops that had been arranged in a neat manner. At the land closest to the wooden fence, no matter whether it was in front or behind the house, these barbarians had plowed it and planted some common herbs there.

A few old barbarians were sitting near the entrance of the village, leaning themselves on the fence and chit chatting happily. At the stream behind the village, dozens of teenage barbarians were washing and cutting a wild boar that weighed at least a thousand pounds, its blood had turned half of the stream red.

Within the village, dozens of fair skinned, beautiful barbarian teenage girls were collecting herbs in an open field. On the open field, wooden boards were arranged. On top of these boards were neatly arranged herbs, which had been put there to be dried out by the sunlight. These teenage girls were collecting them and storing them in some wooden box.

Those young barbarian men had their bodies covered with frightening tattoos, making anyone that looked at them tremble with fear. But this was the first time Wu Qi had seen these barbarian teenage girls. They

had a fair and delicate complexions. Their faces looked really beautiful, and they were only wearing short leather clothes and skirts, which exposed their arms and legs. Their fair skin reflected the sunlight and was glowing gently.

Unlike those male barbarians, these girls only had a small and colorful tattoo of flowers on their wrist and ankle. These tattoos were not awful at all, they even gave these girls an oddly seductive charm.

Wu Qi slid down from the tree and gave Yan Bugui a hand gesture. Then he said, “A lot of old folks and women. I can’t seem to find too many of young men or adult men.”

Yan Bugui cut a vine beside him and drank some water out of it, then he said, “The young and adult barbarians should be out for hunting now. Let’s kill everyone in the village first. Then, when those men return, we’ll kill them as well. Judging from the time, I think they should be back soon.”

Liu Suifeng let out an evil and lustful smile, while rubbing his lap he said, “Those barbarian girls are pretty nice to fuck, this time, I want to fuck at least a few of them!”

Lu Quyuan, Old Devil, and Lord Flame had the same lustful looks on their faces.

Yan Bugui gazed at them and, with an indifferent tone, said, “You’ll have only fifteen minutes. I’ll give you fifteen minutes to do your stuff!”

Old Devil stick out his fat red tongue and lick on his lips, with an evil tone he said, “Fifteen minutes is more than enough for me to suck three girls dry!”

Lu Chengfeng raised his head up and took a look at these lustful men. He shook his head slightly. He took out three formation pillars, found a tree, and setup the Grand White Golden Dagger Formation. Zhang Hu and Hu Wei was tempted by those barbarian girls too, but when they looked at Lu Chengfeng’s dark face, they simply took a few steps back, keeping a distance between them and Liu Suifeng.

Lu Quyuan turned around and gazed at Lu Chengfeng. With a low voice, he cursed, “What a poser, those barbarian girls look real fun and delicious, why not seize the chance and fuck a few of them?”

On the other side, Yan Bugui was looking at Lu Chengfeng in approval, and slowly said, “I didn’t know Mr. Lu knew about formations. That’s really good news. There might be some strong barbarians in the village. Since we need to kill every single barbarian in the village to prevent any survivors from leaking out our arrival, we’ll need mister Lu’s formation help later.”

Lu Chengfeng held his fist and bowed. With an indifferent voice, he said, “Don’t worry, I’m here to help.”

Wu Qi didn’t say anything, he drew out his long sword and squatted under the tree which was also the center of formation, portraying a look that said ‘no matter what, I’m not stepping out from this formation’. When Liu Suifeng and the others saw how he behaved, they felt satisfied. There might be some good stuff in this village. Since Wu Qi didn’t show any signs that he would go with them, that meant that any stuff they

found would be theirs.

Darkness began to close on the scene. Flickering lights had begun to appear within the village. The groups of adult barbarians who went out hunting had returned happily. Yan Bugui stood on a high ground and estimated the number of adult barbarians. According to the numbers of wooden houses in the village, almost all the adult barbarians had returned. Yan Bugui let out a few cries of a night owl, signaled to the other Scouting Officer to grab their swords, and disappeared into the forest.

Pointing his finger forward, the impatient Liu Suifeng immediately sprinted toward the barbarian village with his guards.

Fifty personal guards of Liu Suifeng went to stand guard at the back of village. Old Devil was attacking from the left side, Lord Flame from the right side, and Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan lead the rest of personal guards and marched into the village from its front entrance.

A couple of peak Houtian level guards struck at the same time, their longswords slamming on the front gate of the village forcefully. The two foot thick village gate was broken into pieces after a loud banging sound. There were a few barbarians standing on top of the gate as a night watch, before they could sound the alarm, Yan Bugui waved his hand and shot out a few daggers, killed them by sending these daggers into their throat.

These barbarians let out a painful scream and fall down from the fence. The quiet village swelled into a roar, and more than three hundred strong adult barbarians grabbed their weapons and dashed out from their houses.

There was only a small path in the middle of village, which was now packed with over three hundred adult barbarians, pushing each other in a mess, they were so confused that, even after a few minutes, they still couldn't figure out who had just attacked them and from where these attackers came.

With an order from Liu Suifeng, dozens of his guards took out their nine-bolt crossbow and pointed them at the group of barbarians and pulled the triggers. The distance between them was less than a hundred feet, and the force of nine arrows crossbow allowed the arrows to penetrate heavy armor in more than hundred feet away. These barbarians were only mere mortal, how could their muscles resist these heavy bolts? In an instant, countless cries of pain were heard, at least half of these barbarians fell to the ground.

Before they left the city, Yan Bugui had ordered these guards to apply deadly poison on their arrowheads, therefore, even if the arrows didn't hit on these barbarians' vitals, as long as they got their skin cut a little, the deadly poison on the arrow would kill them in a few seconds.

In a very short time, half of the male barbarians within the village were killed. What happened next was even more devastating.

Old Devil let out an odd cry and jumped over the fence. With a wave of his sleeves, twelve thin copper cymbals shots out and flew alongside the path right in the middle of the village. These copper cymbals swept across the path, cutting through dozens of barbaria, and splitting them in two.

As for Lord Flame, he unleashed a tall red flame that covered his body. With a wild laugh, he spread both arms and sprinted through the barbarians. Any barbarians that were touched by the flame on his body would catch on fire instantly, and be burned to ashes.

Suddenly, Yan Bugui shouted out loud, “Be careful of the fire! Don’t burn any houses in the village. I don’t want other barbarian villages to find out about this. Along our way, we’ll have to slaughter the other barbarian villages!”

After hearing what Yan Bugui said, Lord Flame retracted the flame on his body hurriedly. He then held his internal energy within both palms, struck forward, his palms moving like flying butterflies. The barbarians didn’t even see him coming. Ultra high temperature flowed into the bodies of these barbarians from Lord Flame’s palm strikes. In an instant, their skin turned red and their blood started to boil.

With the help from the two old devils at the Embryonic Breath stage of the Xiantian level, it only took a short time before all the barbarians in the village were dead. The only survivors were dozens of beautiful teenage girls.

“Fifteen minutes, we have only fifteen minutes!” Liu Suifeng couldn’t hold his lust anymore. He tore off his clothes and leaps toward a teenage girl. The teenage girl let out a frightful scream, pulled out a short knife made from jadestone, and stabbed toward Liu Suifeng. Liu Suifeng responded to her with a slap, sending her flying up into the air. She lost conscious when she landed on the ground.

Old Devil, Lord Flame, Lu Quyuan, and all guards dashed to those hopeless teenage girls impatiently. Soon, the ear-splitting sound of

screaming, yelling, and cursing began to resound within the village.

Deep and subtle chirps came from village's surrounding, only Yan Bugui could understand the meaning of these chirps. There were fifteen barbarians trying to flee, but they had been killed by the other Scouting Officers who were on guard in the forest. In the dark forest, these elite Scouting Officers represented death.

All of a sudden, a girl cried out in an absolutely terrifying scream.

Old Devil was laying on top of this girl, his muscles were contracting in a weird manner, while the girl's body was trembling violently. Soon, the girl's skin turned extremely pale, as if all her blood was missing. Her eyes began to pop out and stare blankly into the sky. Her pupils had shrunk to the size of needle.

"I need more! Hahaha, I told ya these barbarian girls were full of blood and energy!" The Old Devil simply threw away the dead girl, turned around, kicked away a guard who was moving his lower body crazily on top of a girl, and laid himself on top of the poor girl eagerly.

Within the forest outside of village, Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng were standing on a tree branch side by side. Under the dimmed light of the village, they were watching what was happening silently.

"They are animals, right?" Lu Chengfeng asked with a low and deep voice.

"Indeed. If I have the chance, I'll kill that Old Devil." Wu Qi looked at Lu

Chengfeng with a serious expression, “He better not let me have the chance, or else I will kill him.”

Hu Wei, who was standing beneath the tree, raised his head up and said, “When these barbarians attacked Little Meng City, they did the same thing.”

Wu Qi stared up into the sky with both his hands hidden under his sleeves. He said, “But, we are not barbarians! When two races are at war, it was normal to kill each other, and insulting a few girls occasionally, that’s fine. But to suck girls dry, like they did? They girl really died miserably.”

Lu Chengfeng raised his head up, staring into a blinking star. He breathed out a sigh and said, “Old Devil? When I have a strong enough cultivation level, I’ll help you in killing him!”

Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng looked at each other and smiled at the same time. When they were just about to say something, a loud tiger roar came from afar and shook their bodies.

Outside of the village fence, a nearly seven foot tall, dark skinned, and muscular barbarian was walking slowly into village with an over two thousand pound wild boar on his shoulder. When he stood at the entrance to the village, he saw what was happening on the open field, which was usually full of dried herbs, and let out a thunderous roar.

The barbarian threwn the wild boar on his shoulder far away with one hand while roaring in rage. Suddenly, a four meters tall, full red shadow of a tiger appeared in the middle of the air behind this barbarian.

Lu Chengfeng's body trembled, and he shouted out in disbelief, "Beast warrior! Why there is a beast warrior in a small village like this?"

Wu Qi looked at that barbarian who had a tiger shadow on his back, amazed, then he asked, "What is beast warrior?"

The barbarian beast warrior let out a loud cry, then he leapt forward like a real tiger. With just a single leap, he had traveled nearly a hundred feet, striking his big fist onto a guard who was crazily raping a girl.

A crystal clear cracking sound rang out. It was as if someone had just stepped onto a honey peach. The guard's armor was crushed like a tin can, and his body was crushed into meat paste.

Chapter 41 - Seizing Souls

The movement of that barbarian beast warrior was extremely fast. With a single punch, he had killed a guard. In the next second, he sent out two punches toward Old Devil and Lord Flame.

Both old devils were indulging in the fit and silky smooth bodies of the barbarian girls. When the guard was killed and his blood and flesh spilled on their bodies, only then were they roused and realized something was happening. However, it was too late, the heavy punches from that beast warrior approached them like two heavy battering rams.

Both of them cried out in shock. Lord Flame's response was slightly faster. He hurridly climbed up from the girl's body, swinging both his arms backward and defend himself from the punch. Due to the suddenness of it, he couldn't counter attack with sufficient force and the heavy punch of barbarian beast warrior slammed onto his palms, making him cry out in misery, and sending him flying over a hundred feet away. His head smashed right into a huge rock.

"My palms!" As if just crushed by a steamroller, both of Lord Flame's palms had become twisted, like a chicken's feet. The skin and muscles on his palms looked like they had exploded, and blood kept rushing out from the broken part, revealing some broken bones underneath.

While Lord Flame was crying out in misery and pain over his palms, the Old Devil was suffering an even greater pain.

No matter whether it was Lord Flame or Old Devil, both of them had cultivated with evil skills, and they had both reached the Embryonic Breath tier of the Xiantian realm by using external forces. Therefore, both of them had messy internal energies and weak foundations. Their strength was weaker than other, more pure Embryonic Breath tier Xiantian realm warriors. Both of them lacked the body strength that went along with their 'supposed level', the speed of their internal energy circulation was even weaker than some 'Meridian Cultivating' tier Xiantian realm warriors.

Old Devil could only sense a foul breeze approaching him from behind. He was forcibly absorbing the Qi of barbarian girls, how could he had enough time to stop and turn around to defend himself? By the time the attack had arrived, he had barely removed himself from the girl's body and concentrated a little bit of internal energy on his back to protect himself.

With a deep thudding noise, Old Devil was sent flying two hundred feet away. The furious punch had exploded at his back like a bomb, tearing apart his skin and muscles. His spine had broken into at least three parts. Although he was a cultivator of the Embryonic Breath tier of the Xiantian realm, with the spine broken into pieces he was destined to become a disabled man.

The Old Devil lay on the ground, crying out painfully. He was scratching and pushing frantically on the ground, however, since his spine was broken, he had lost all feeling below his chest. No matter how much strength he used, he still couldn't get himself off the ground. The Old Devil, who had killed countless innocent lives, had finally tasted fear, "Save me, Old Flame, save me! Marquis, please save me, please!"

Lord Flame had his palms severely injured, and was busy applying

medicated paste to them. Therefore, when he heard the Old Devil's miserable scream, he simply ignored him, as he was busy.

Liu Suifeng couldn't allow an Embryonic Breath tier of Xiantian level cultivator, who his family worshipped, to die like this. He quickly got up and tried to find some guards and ask them to save the Old Devils, but the barbarian beast warrior had spotted Liu Suifeng, who had a golden helmet and a luxurious shirt.

"Father! Mother! Sister!" The beast warrior looks up into the sky and roared. Then he punched forward and forced back eight of the strongest right-hand men of Liu Suifeng. After that, he sprinted in the direction of Liu Suifeng, both his eyes had turned red. Easily evading two longswords that were trying to slash his body into half, this beast warrior grabbed the heads of two of Liu Suifeng's personal guards and squeezed them into clumps of blood and bones. The next second, he kicked Liu Suifeng.

Liu Suifeng screamed and hurriedly fell back, but his speed couldn't match with that of a beast warrior. Luckily, Liu Suifeng managed to pull majority of his body back before the beast warrior struck, but there was a small part of his body, which had grown bigger and still standing straight up, that was still in range. The tiptoe of the beast warrior hit dead on, smashing this little brother of Liu Suifeng into a clump of blood.

"Oh, my mother!" Liu Suifeng cried out in extreme pain. His face started turning green and he immediately jumping around while holding his crotch.

The barbarian beast warrior roared angrily and said, "Fuck your mother!" Then he moved like a black whirlwind, roaring while making his way toward Liu Suifeng.

All the guards brought by Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan rushed up and attacked this barbarian beast warrior without considering their own safety, but this beast warrior was like a real tiger in human form. He had a massive strength and was extremely fast. He even injured two Embryonic Breath tier old devils with a sneak attack. How could these guards handle such a threat so easily?

Especially when this beast warrior roared. His roar was like dozens of tigers roaring out at the same time. The incredibly loud roar had shaken these guards and sent an endless buzzing sound through their ears, making them lose their balance. They just couldn't attack the enemy effectively.

Something even more terrifying had finally happened, right when dozens of peak Houtian realm warriors were attacking this beast warrior, the shadowy tiger behind him became concentrated, looking up into the sky and letting out a silent roar. All the grasses and flowers within thousand feet started to rattle, though there was no breeze. Weeds that had grown on the rooftops were sent flying away in all directions.

These dozens of peak Houtian realm warriors dropped their weapons at the same time and, with extreme fearful expressions, they stared at the shadowy tiger. They covered their ears with both hands but could not stop blood from rushing out. The silent roar of this shadowy tiger was resonating in these guard's minds. It seemed like it might even shatter their souls.

Seeing no one could defeat this beast warrior, Yan Bugui decided to strike finally.

“Why are you guys just standing around? Round him up and shoot him with your crossbows!”

Yan Bugui shouted out loud, and brought a sense of order back to those panicky guards, then he drew out a longsword from his back, and his eyes seemed to start glowing. A long howl of a wolf came from his back as a faded figure of green wolf made its appearance on Yan Bugui’s back. As a result, Yan Bugui sprinted forward at an incredible speed. At the same time, he swung the longsword in his hand, thrusting toward the barbarian beast warrior ferociously.

Lu Chengfeng shouted out in amazed, “So, Yan Bugui is a beast warrior too!”

The barbarian beast warrior let out a shrill howl, then he roared, “Father! Mother! Sister! All of you, die!”

Striking out with both arms, like a raging thunderstorm, this barbarian beast warrior sent dozens of punches and kicks toward Yan Bugui. The ground was shook when the barbarian beast warrior jumped up and landed back on the ground, his massive weight and the forces he generated made the land shake violently, launching tiny rocks on the ground a few feet up in the air.

Yan Bugui lowered his body and began to swing the sword in his hand. Every slash of his sword generated a gleam of light. In quick succession, multiple sword lights were unleashed, they were like endless lightning strikes that slashed through dark clouds, thrusting continuously toward the vital points of the barbarian beast warrior.

The barbarian beast warrior possessed a strength without rival, and his speed was fast as well. Although Yan Bugui's strength was weaker than the barbarians, his speed was much faster. Both men were like two crazily spinning whirlwinds that swept across the village. In just half a second half of the houses were destroyed by them. Whenever the punches of barbarian beast warrior arrived, a wooden house would explode into pieces. Wherever Yan Bugui's sword light reached, whatever it hit would be slashed into debris.

Suddenly, a few guards of Liu Suifeng let out loud shouts at the same time.

When Yan Bugui heard the shout, he immediately fall back. In next second, those guards pointed their nine-bolt crossbow toward the barbarian beast warrior and pulled the triggers.

A total of thirty-six pure steel bolts were shot from a distance of less than twenty feet. Although the reaction of barbarian beast warrior was fast, he simply had no way to evade these powerful bolts at such a short distance. Eighteen bolts managed to hit the barbarian beast warrior's body, piercing through his strong muscles and coming out the other side with eighteen streams of blood, finally nailing themselves on the village fences.

The deadly poison on the arrowhead soon took effect. He started to tremble then the dark skin of barbarian began to turn a dark green color.

"You, killed all the people of my tribe!" The barbarian beast warrior stood standing on the same spot. He continued to roar, "I curse you, in the name of Mountain Spirit, I curse you! All of you will die within this forest, your souls will be devoured by the Mountain Spirit and you shall

perish in the eternal darkness!”

Yan Bugui withdrew his longsword and stared at the barbarian beast warrior, sneering, “There are no Spirits. All of those Spirits that you barbarians worship, they are all fake.”

The barbarian beast warrior roared angrily, trying to strike Yan Bugui with a punch. However, the deadly poison had spread across every part of his body, including his heart. Therefore, as he raised up his fist, his body became stiff and fell to the ground.

The faded shadow of the tiger standing behind the barbarian suddenly became concentrated. It gazed at Yan Bugui for some time, then it looked into the sky and let out a silent roar. Layers of bright lights appeared all over its body. At the same time, countless tiny bits of amber flew out from the barbarian’s body, slowly merging with the tiger’s body.

Yan Bugui let out a cruel smile and said, “I can’t let this happen. You were killed by someone. If your soul is merged with this beast soul and both your souls escape from the cycle of reincarnation, you might turn into a devil soul a couple of years later. At that time, we’ll have a big problem on our hands!”

He quickly walked in front of the barbarian beast warrior and pressed his palm on the tiger’s forehead. In a low voice he start to read out some scripts.

“All souls are from the same root. Heroic soul of the mountain, this is not a place you should stay. In the name of the Mother of All Souls, I command you to leave now.”

A green bright light shot out from Yan Bugui's palm, merging into the body of the shadowy tiger.

The shadowy tiger shattered immediately. As if countless fireflies had suddenly appeared within the village, these small dots of red light were dancing in the night breeze. Soon they flew to where Wu Qi and the others were standing.

Yan Bugui breathed out a sigh of relief and said, "It's finally done."

After these red dots were pushed by night breeze into the forest, and kept floating for a few thousand feet. They had became faded and could barely be made out with the naked eye. Wu Qi unleashed his water vapor into surrounding area, attempting to sense their whereabouts.

That was a pure soul energy which had lost all its memory. Yan Bugui had shattered them into the most basic and pure soul particles with a secret skill.

Wu Qi suddenly recalled the memory from when he was in the Great Universal Dimensional Portal. He instinctively took a deep breath, then circulated his Qi and silently activated his Hand of Web.

Water vapor had filled the surrounding area, and soon more than 80% of the soul particles were pulled toward Wu Qi. Viewed through Wu Qi's divine senses, the huge amount of water vapor started to spin extremely fast, and all these soul particles were absorbed into his body by the vortex.

In just a few breaths time, the strength of Wu Qi's soul had quadrupled. Now, even with his eyes closed, he could easily sense everything within a hundred feet. The grass swayed and leaves were dancing in the breeze. There were even some bugs hiding underneath the soil in front of him. Everything was so clear, it was as if it was all right in front of his eyes.

The internal energy within his body was rapidly compressed. A few important acupuncture points along the twelve meridians were broken through by this 'press' of energy. Water vapor, which could been seen with the naked eye, started to slowly gather around Wu Qi's body.

Lu Chengfeng stared blankly at Wu Qi, his face was trembling and twisting, as if he had just seen a ghost.

Wu Qi stared back at Lu Chengfeng and gave him a smile. With both hands on his back, he said, "After watching the fight between the two beast warriors, I had a moment of inspiration and broke through to the 'Respiration' tier of the Xiantian realm!"

Zhang Hu and Hu Wei, who were standing under a tree, were so shocked they almost bumped their heads into the tree.

Chapter 42 - The Ritual

Although they managed to completely slaughter a barbarian village, they had suffered great losses as well.

Without taking those guards who were killed into consideration, Lord Flame had both his palms wounded severely, thus his battle ability had dropped by at least thirty percent. Old Devil had his backbone broken, without some legendary medicines that could rejoin his bones and meridians, he would be a cripple for the rest of his life.

As for Liu Suifeng, he was lying on the ground with both hand holding onto his crotch. His face had turned pale, due to extreme pain, while white bubbles kept spitting out from the corner of his lips. He was in so much pain that both his eyes were popping ou. Green veins near his neck kept trembling and both of his hands were stained with blood.

“Why did this happen to me? How can it be? How could he do this to me? No. Impossible! I would rather have one leg chopped off than become a cripple like this!” Liu Suifeng was experiencing a severe pain that caused his body to keep trembling. He looked to Yan Bugui and said, “Master Yan, Master Yan Bugui, save me, please save me! Do you have any medicine that can make my broken part be reborn? Please save me!”

Yan Bugui kept a straight face and didn’t make a sound.

Make a broken body part be reborn? Maybe some legendary medicines could do this? But even if there was one, it would not be something that

he, as a Scouting Officer, would have in hand. Even if he had it, would he really gave it to Liu Suifeng to regrow his dick?

Wu Qi, with his hands on his back, walked toward Liu Suifeng with a bright smile on his face. He popped his head in and thrown an examining look at where Liu Suifeng was wounded. He breathed out a long sigh, “Master Yan, after this mission, you definitely need to say a few good words for Marquis Liu. If there is any vacancy in the palace of Great Yan, could you help Marquis Liu get a position there?” [1]

Yan Bugui had his face twist in an odd manner when he heard what Wu Qi said, without giving any response, he clenched his teeth tight and turned around, looking at his subordinates, who were busy searching the village.

Liu Suifeng was so angry that his eyes turned green. He gnashed his teeth at Wu Qi and let out a hoarse roar, “Wu Qi, I swear, One day I will kill you! I’ll kill you!”

Hearing this, Wu Qi jumped back like a frightened rabbit, and ran up beside Yan Bugui. He pointed at Liu Suifeng, who was yelling in fierce anger and shouted, “Marquis Liu, both of us are working together with master Yan for his military mission, you’d better nott do anything silly!” He turned to Yan Bugui, “According to the military laws of the Great Yan Dynasty, what is the punishment for killing a comrade during a mission?”

Yan Bugui replied with a cruel voice, “According to military laws of the Great Yan Dynasty, punishment for the one who killed his comrade is death! Also, all his family members titles will be demoted by one rank!” Liu Suifeng shut his mouth instantly. He just kept staring at Wu Qi in an insidious way, clenching his fist tighter and tighter. As a result, he

squeezed his crotch too tight and almost smashed what's left there, making him scream out in terrible pain again.

Yan Bugui glared at Liu Suifeng, then, in a deep voice, said, "Lord Flame will lead the rest of guards and follow me in the mission. Have two men stay here and take care of Marquis Liu and Old Devil. Both of you, if you have the courage, just stay in the village and wait for our return. If you lack in courage, return to where you came from by yourselves!"

Liu Suifeng's body trembled, and he stared blankly at Yan Bugui.

He was only leaving two men behind to take care of Liu Suifeng and Old Devil? Staying in this village of the barbarians? What if some barbarians from another village came and visited their friends? What if there were some wild beasts or poisonous bugs? It was really risky to stay in the village! But, how could they return to where they came from? With just the four of them, Liu Suifeng had no confidence they could make it out alive!

Yan Bugui didn't care what Liu Suifeng was thinking about, he just kept giving out orders and had everyone gather in front of him. Seven of his subordinates had found few sheets of thin beast skins in one of the biggest wooden houses in the village. Something unknown was drawn on top of these skins. Yan Bugui rolled up these beast skins like they were something really precious, then he inserted them into a copper pipe made from an Earthfire tri-alloy and tightly sealed it.

Earthfire tri-alloy copper, it was an alloy that made from melting red copper, purple gold, and white silver essence together with Earthfire. Lightweight and tough, it was able to withstand high temperatures. This kind of copper pipe was a special tool used by Scouting Officers to keep

important documents safe.

Lu Chengfeng watched Yan Bugui as he carefully placed the copper pipe into a small bag on his waist. To his surprise, the unattractive, dirty, black, small bag was actually a magical storage bag. By storing a few thin sheets of beast leather in such a protected place, it was obviously that the things recorded on it were really valuable.

After wiping out this village, Yan Bugui gave out an order and the whole group continued their journey deeper into the forest.

A guard was ordered to stay back in the ruined village and take care of Old Devil, who had his backbone broken into pieces. Liu Suifeng had his severely wounded little brother dressed up with a bandage, then asked two of his guards to make a stretcher with a wooden door from the village. They carried him, staggering behind the group. According to Liu Suifeng, as long as he could keep moving, he wanted to follow Yan Bugui and help him to accomplish the mission, risking his life for the Great Yan Dynasty!

Along the way, Wu Qi kept strolling around Liu Suifeng and purposely looked at Liu Suifeng's bleeding crotch. Liu Suifeng was extremely pissed off, but since his little brother was severely wounded, how could he be in the mood to quarrel with Wu Qi?

After the first barbarian village, Yan Bugui brought the whole group and wiped out another thirteen barbarian villages along the way. These villages had small populations. The most populated village had about six hundred barbarians residing within it. Except for four villages, which had beast warriors, the rest of the villages only had ordinary barbarian fighters. Under the brutal attack from Wu Qi and the rest, none of these

villages caused them much trouble.

There were a few times when Yan Bugui's group met with one of the other groups. Sometimes they even worked with other groups to wipe out a few barbarian villages. After that, they would quickly separate. As Wu Qi thought about it, he found out that all five groups of men were separated, yet moving in a straight line, wiping out all the barbarian villages along the way.

After another seven days of the expeditioning, the group had finally come to the deepest area of the Meng Mountains.

[ED: It is at this point that I realize that this is not a singular mountain, but an entire mountain range. I will now go back and change all the "Meng Mountain"s into "the Meng Mountains"s, to indicate their status and size correctly.]

The group had become like a bunch of savages, due to the restless expedition. They came out from the forest breathing rapidly, and then were shocked by what was presented in front of them: was a huge, sky-blue lake.

The round lake had a calm surface, and was over a hundred miles in diameter. It was really surprising that there would be such a huge lake in the depths of the Meng Mountains. Even Zhang Hu, who had been hunting barbarians in the Meng Mountains for years, was amazed by what he saw. There were dozens of huge rocks and small islands in the middle of this lake. A flock of white water fowl flew above the lake's surface, and the crystal clear water reflected their elegant movement, like a mirror.

On the other side of this huge lake stood a tall mountain. It was at least ten thousand feet tall, and numerous caves were dug out of the side of the mountain. These caves were connected with planked bridges, and countless barbarians were going in and out from these caves. The largest cave was right in the middle, with the entrance spanning around a thousand feet. A large amount of smoke kept spreading out from within.

"We're finally here. Stay alert. We'll walk around this lake and group up with the rest of our men at the foot of the mountain." Yan Bugui estimated the time with his fingers, then he nodded his head satisfyingly and said, "We are right on time. Tomorrow night, these barbarians will have a ritual, which is a grand ceremony to worship their god. During the ritual, we'll need to snatch a few black stone tablets!"

Yan Bugui's vision was like a sharp blade. He gazed at everyone fiercely and said, "We'll need to snatch those stone tablets, regardless of the cost. We might only have one shot at it. After this grand ceremony, these stone tablets will be sent to another major barbarian clan deeper within the Meng Mountains. It will take another sixty years for them to come back to this clan. With our current manpower, there is no way for us to venture deeper into the Meng Mountains."

Zhang Hu opened his mouth and let out a slight cough, then he boldly asked, "But master, this place is the deepest area of the Meng Mountains."

Yan Bugui lookeded at Zhang Hu, then he breathed out a sigh and said, "I brought eighty men here, and, even after spending two years here, we only plotted out a rough map of the Meng Mountains. The place we at right now is only considered to be at the border of the Meng Mountains. The Meng Mountains beside Little Meng City is just a small branch of the real Meng Mountains. No matter how deep into these mountains you

have come, it is nothing compared with their actual size."

Zhang Hu swallowed and kept his mouth shut.

When Wu Qi heard what Yan Bugui said, he instantly felt pins and needles on his scalp. The few thousands miles of the Meng Mountains near Little Meng City were just a small branch of the real Meng Mountains? Exactly how big exactly were these Meng Mountains?

Yan Bugui didn't bother to check on their reactions, he just started walking and quickly lead the group around the huge lake. By the time the sun started to set, they had finally come to a dense forest. The other four groups of men had arrived at the same spot too. Wu Qi calculated silently, there were only forty-three Scouting Officers who were wearing the same uniform as Yan Bugui. In two years, Yan Bugui had lost thirty-seven men in this forest.

Wu Qi had no idea how strong were these Scouting Officers were. If they were all beast warriors, like Yan Bugui, then the losses were, actually, quite huge. Those barbarian beast warriors had the ability to injure a cultivator at the Embryonic Breath tier of the Xiantian realm. From this, he could guess how strong beast warriors actually were.

Compared to Wu Qi's group, the other four groups didn't have too many casualties. The greatest casualties actually came from Liu Suifeng's guards. After all five groups joined together, there were still over eight hundred people left. The deaths of Liu Suifeng's guards accounted for half of the total casualties.

This large group of people was now hiding within the dense forest,

waiting for the right time to strike.

Late in the afternoon of the next day, the dull sounds of horns and drums resounded from the shore of the beach a few miles away.

Yan Bugui, who was resting under a tall tree, immediately jumped to his feet. He pointed at a few men and signaled them to follow him. Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng were among those he pointed to. These few men carefully crossed the thick forest and approached the beach, hiding in small bushes at the edge of the forest.

The beach was an open space, so Wu Qi and others could see what's happening without any obstructions. Soon they saw a lot of barbarians with a solemn and respectful expressions start walking out of a cave at the foot of the mountains. The ones who walked in front were a few old and skinny barbarians. They were so skinny that they actually looked like walking skeletons. They had poisonous snakes coiling around their necks, and their earrings were actually some poisonous bugs. These old barbarians were top naked, and they carried bone and jade blades while dancing with strange movements.

Almost ten thousand barbarians came out from the cave. All of them were following closely behind those old barbarians, walking toward the lakeside and forming a half circle formation on the wide open beach. Those old barbarians were standing right in the center point of the circle, facing toward the huge lake that reflected the starry sky under the moonlight.

Accompanying by the dull drum sounds, one hundred huge cows were lead out by a group of barbarians. These cows were a few times bigger than the biggest cow Wu Qi had seen on Earth. The cows were lead and

lined up in a straight line on the shoreline where the water and beach met.

With a command given by one of the old barbarians, these one hundred cows had their heads chopped off by axes held by the barbarians standing beside them.

One hundred cow's heads fell into the lake, and a huge amount of blood flowed into the water. Soon the lake was covered with a large patch of blood.

The calm surface of lake starting to ripple, causing countless silvery gleams of light to roll on the surface of the water. The next second, a long shadow appeared under the water.

Accompanying with the sound of water splashing, an extremely elegant, silvery white, giant serpent emerged slowly from the water.

Gentle moonlight sprinkled on the body of this giant serpent, and the silvery white scales on its body reflected the moonlight and shone like a crystal lamp, producing a gorgeous halo around it.

Note:

[1] Only queen and princess lived in the palace, besides the Emperor himself, all male servants had to get their dick cut off before they could serve in the palace. They are called eunuchs.

Chapter 43 - Merging Soul

The several hundred foot tall body that emerged from the crystal clear water looked really similar to a king cobra, which Wu Qi was familiar with, but it was a giant serpent with full silvery white, almost transparent, crystal-like scales. However, this huge serpent didn't portray a ferocious feeling, like an ordinary snake that made no human wanted to get close to it, but it gave off an elegant feeling. It was so gentle and gorgeous that every single movement of it had a charming quality.

The giant serpent swam to the lakeside, lowering its head quietly, and started to devour the slaughtered cows one at a time.

After devouring all one hundred cows, the giant serpent straightened up its body, pointing its mouth toward the moon, then it opened up its mouth and shot out a milky white breath. The breath shot straight into the sky, like a tall pillar. On top of this pillar of breath, a human-sized white pearl that was floating around, constantly absorbing the greenish white essence of moonlight.

The greenish white halo, which could be seen with naked eye, rushed into the white pearl, wave after wave, and the giant serpent's body was resonating in the same manner, emitting waves of charming halo from the top of its head to the tip of its tail. The massive amount of energy swept across, sending three foot tall waves rolling across the surface of the lake.

Over a hundred thousand barbarians were standing at the lakeside with their huge weapons and heavy shields raised. They lifted up their right

feet and then forcefully stamped onto the ground. At the same time, they shouted out, 'Hey! Hey! Hey!'. The sound of the stamping of feet and the loud shout mixed together and turned into a massive sound wave, rocking the water and even shaking nearby trees, sending countless animals hiding within the forest scurrying away.

The old barbarian leaders raised their jade and bone blades high up and started dancing and cheering, all the other barbarians were following their leader's dancing pattern and shouting out louder and louder. The barbarians had began to use their internal energy to roar even louder, making their shouts become like thunder. These hundred thousand thunderous roars mixed together and traveled out, shaking the ground and making Wu Qi, who was hiding few miles away, feel like a wave was continuously slamming into his chest.

"Lay the formation!" Yan Bugui looked at Lu Chengfeng, handing him three fist-sized Earth elemental energy stones.

Lu Chengfeng's eyes brightened. He quickly grabbed the soul stones given by Yan Bugui and took out his three formation pillars. Then he inserted these soul stones into the pillars. The Earth elemental soul stones he had used to activate Grand White Gold Dagger formation previously were only the size of a human thumb. The one he was using now was at least ten times bigger and would really make the power of the formation increase significantly.

Laying his stomach on the ground, Lu Chengfeng crawled toward the sandy beach and lay three pillars on it. In order to further strengthen the power of the formation, Lu Chengfeng clenched his teeth tight and took out some silver and gold essence, placing them within the formation. With the help of these Metal elemental essences, the formation would be able to absorb Metal energy and up its power to another level.

Yan Bugui took out a stack of red talismans from his magical storage bag, turned around, and gave them to one of his subordinate.

"Get those people hiding in the forest to prepare. Have everyone wrap this 'Explosive Talisman' around their bolts. Let's give them something nice."

When Yan Bugui took out the stack of talismans, his expression told of the pain he felt in his heart. Even the corners of his eyes were trembling. The subordinate swallowed his saliva, grabbed the talismans, turned around, and went back to the forest.

The dancing movement of those barbarians became wilder and wilder, and their roaring became louder and louder. Suddenly, the crystal clear and melodious singing of barbarian women resounded. More than a thousand barbarian girls made their debut while dancing and singing, they jumped into the lake and made a circle around the giant serpent, dancing in a crazy manner, their melodious singing mixing together with the wild roar of those barbarian men, portraying a weird charming energy.

These barbarian girls loosened their hair and exposed a large amount of their fair bodies, dancing around the giant serpent crazily. Their bodies were twisting like a snake, soon the giant serpent had been influenced by these girls and started to swing its body.

Yan Bugui pointed at the serpent. "Hey, anyone knows what this big guy is?" From his magical storage bag, Yan Bugui took out a bronze colored crossbow that was two palms wide, he clenched his teeth tight and

pulled the string with all his strength, then he carefully took out a flaming red bolt made from a red crystal and placed it on the string.

Lu Chengfeng and few others looked at each other, shook their head at the same time, none of them knew what was this giant serpent.

On the other side, Wu Qi was staring at the giant serpent with all his attention, his mouth filling with water. He murmured, “The Innate Water Serpent. It turns black after a hundred years and turns green after a thousand years, but only a three thousand year old serpent could become pure white, like this. This is an innate Water Serpent that had been raised for at least three thousand years. Among all the other water elemental beasts, it is ranked thirty-seventh inthe lower tier.”

Yan Bugui bared his teeth and said, “A three thousand year old demon? Tch. I wonder if the ‘Exorcism Crossbow of Red Flame’ provided by Scouting Office can even harm it?”

With an amazed gaze at Wu Qi, Yan Bugui gave him a thumbs up and praised, “Brother Wu Qi, it seems you are pretty knowledgeable!”

Lu Chengfeng immediately jumped up and said, “Master Yan, Wu Qi is my chief right-hand man! I only have a few capable men working with me, please don’t snatch my men from me.”

Yan Bugui glanced at Lu Chengfeng and grinned, then he carefully aimed at the giant serpent with his crossbow.

As the moon reached up to the middle of the sky, the dancing and

singing barbarians suddenly stopped all their movements. A soft and gentle voice slowly spoke, “Guardian Spirit of our clan, now is the time to fulfill the treaty between you and our ancestor!”

The crowds separated from the middle and made a way, a naked barbarian teenage girl walked out from within slowly.

Wu Qi and all other men were stunned when they saw the girl. This barbarian girl was extremely beautiful. Zhang Hu was actually drooling right now.

The girl was taller than Wu Qi. Her body was slim and fit, and no extra fat could found on it. Not a single imperfection could be found on her body. She had an extremely beautiful face. In fact, it was the most perfect face Wu Qi had ever seen. It was as if all the energy in this forest had gathered on her, therefore creating such a magnificent being.

The girl twisting her waist and slowly walked up in front of the giant serpent, raising up her head and staring at it.

The giant serpent, who was absorbing the energy from the moon, slowly lowered its head, a slurred voice came out from its mouth, “Descendant of ‘Shizhe’, do you possessed the qualification to accept my soul?”

The girl giggled, then her body blinked and suddenly appeared on the sandy beach a thousand feet away. A huge rock, as large as five adult men, was laying there. The girl pressed her palm on the rock casually. In the next instant, the huge rock shattered into thousands of fragments.

The force of this girl's palm was amazing. Some of the stone fragments even landed near Wu Qi. He grabbed a fragment and squeezed it with his fingers. The fragment shattered, but Wu Qi, who had broken through to the Xiantian level, felt pain on his fingers. His finger bone had almost cracked when he broke the fragment.

"This girl has a cultivation level of at least the 'Mind Focus' tier of the Xiantian realm." Wu Qi shook his head and stared at the teenage girl, saying in a low voice, "Compared to Old Devil and Lord Flame, who were cultivating with evil skills and external forces, this girl's cultivation is, without a doubt, solid."

Yan Bugui grabbed few rock fragments beside him. He found out that the sides had smooth cuts, the girl had unleashed her force evenly enough that the cut was smooth. He squeezed the fragment and it shattered to ashes, but, at the same time, his fingers had became red as well.

"What a monster! She doesn't look that old. How could she possess such an incredible cultivation?" Lu Chengfeng kept staring at the girl's pert breasts and firm butt, unintentionally smacking his lips.

Yan Bugui had a weird expression, with a low voice he said, "In order to merge with the soul of this Innate Water Serpent, making it into her own natal beast soul and becoming a beast warrior, how could her cultivation be weak?"

Pointing at his own nose with his thumb, Yan Bugui sneered, "The 'Wind Breaking Wolf' that I merged with was only a lower tier Wood elemental beast, and ranked at one hundred and ninety-seventh. The requirement to merge with it was being, at least, a peak Houtian realm cultivation

level. For a beast like this giant serpent, what do you think the requirement is?"

On the lakeside, as if the Innate Water Serpent was not satisfied with the girl's cultivation level, it let out a cold humph, throwing an closer look at the girl. It finally nodded it's head and said, "The treaty with your ancestor, I'll fulfill it. My soul will protect the clan of 'Shizhe' until the time where both of our lives end. My body, you need to worship it properly. No one is allowed to insult it."

Except for the teenage girl, all the other barbarians kneeled down on the ground, answering the request with respect.

The giant serpent took a deep breath, then it turned around and looked at the surrounding scenery. Breathing out a sigh of nostalgia, it said, "It's been three thousand eight hundred years, and in all that time, I've always stayed here. Woman, when my soul resides in your soul, I'll be in an eternal slumber until both of our lives end. Use my power wisely, protect your clan and strengthen my soul."

The giant serpent opened up its mouth and swallowed the white pearl, then it said, with an indifferent tone, "Be prepared, accept my power and my soul!"

All barbarians stood up, once again swinging their weapons and shields, and stamping on the ground forcefully with their feet.

The barbarian girl walked slowly in front of the giant serpent, sitting down in the water with her legs crossed. Deep chanting came out from the mouths of the barbarian leaders, and they waved their jade and bone

blades, once again dancing crazily around the girl and the giant serpent. Following their wild movement of dancing, a chilly wind suddenly started blowing from the forest, sweeping and whirling across the scene.

The Scouting Officers had brought all the men hiding in the forest to a nearby spot. They carefully formed a charging formation within the forest.

All the barbarians were immersed in an insane religious atmosphere. They would never imagined that here, in the heart of where their civilization, there would be a group of outsiders sneaking around.

Over eight hundred three bolt crossbows and nine bolt crossbows raised up slowly, following Yan Bugui's command, aiming at these barbarians on the sandy beach.

The giant serpent let out a shrill roar suddenly, and snowy white blood began to leak out from its mouth. It was twisting its body in pain, then a shadowy white figure, looking exactly like its real body, swam out from its mouth, slowly floating down towards the top of the girl's head.

A barbarian leader dashed forward. Using a bone blade, he made a cut between the eyes of the girl. The girl started bleeding, and a faded shadowy figure, looking exactly like the girl, floated out from between her eyes. That was the girl's soul!

All the surrounding barbarians started to sing an ancient melody, and they kneeled down on the ground faithfully, worshipping the body of giant serpent, which was now lifeless. The heavy body of giant serpent had fallen down into the water forcefully, splashing a huge amount of

water everywhere.

The girl's soul moved her hand, chanting mystical words and forming some strange seal with her hand. Layers of greenish light appeared and connected to the soul of the giant serpent. The soul of the giant serpent slowly flew towards the girl's soul. The human head sized white pearl was following behind.

"After merging with me, absorb all the energy contained within this pearl. It will make your power increase significantly!" The glow within the soul of the giant serpent's eyes slowly faded, its voice becoming unclear.

Yan Bugui suddenly leaped forward, his crossbow produced a loud banging sound, shooting the red arrow toward the girl's body.

"Everyone, attack!"

Chapter 44 - Serpent Pearl

The ‘Exorcism Crossbow of Red Flame’, a secret weapon for Scouting Officers of the Great Yan Dynasty, was not a magical weapon, yet possessed an incredible power, which was not any weaker than a magical weapon. An ordinary pure steel bolt shot from this crossbow could impale three layers of heavy armor from a mile away. It was an extremely powerful weapon. Together with a specially made ‘Explosive Bolt of Red Flame’, the damage it could deal was no different from a missile fired from a fighter jet in Wu Qi’s knowledge.

With a blink of red light, the arrow had penetrated the girl’s chest.

When a beast warrior was in the middle of merging souls, that was the weakest point of time for both the human and the beast. No matter how powerful the soul beast or warrior, they were communicating in pure soul form during the process. Therefore, if they suffered even the slightest bit of damage, their soul would disintegrate. Besides that, once the soul was out of the body, no matter it was the soul beast or warrior, there was no way for them to control their body. So even a three years old kid with a pair of scissors could easily kill a peak Xiantian warrior.

The bolt that could impale three layers of heavy armor, tore through the girl’s breast, ripping a big hole in her chest. When the Explosive Bolt of Red Flame fell onto the ground, the explosive symbols carved on it immediately exploded due to the vibration. At the same time, it ignited the Fire Soul Crystal that used to made the arrow.

Following a loud bang, a bright shining red light covered an area of

nearly a hundred feet. The girl's body and soul, together with giant serpent's soul, were shattered and destroyed. As for the human head-sized white pearl, it was sent flying high up into the sky by the massive explosion. The barbarian leaders and the few hundred barbarians who were standing nearby got themselves drawn into the explosion. In an instant, they were blown into pieces.

The waves of the explosion swept across a nearly one thousand foot area, sending a few thousand barbarians tumbling., clashing, and pushing into their own men. The explosion had turned these barbarians upside down. Before these barbarians could react, an even heavier blow was on its way.

Following the dulled sounds of bowstrings releasing, thousands of crossbow bolts were launched into the air. Some of these bolts had Explosive Talismans, given by Yan Bugui, attached to them. The sandy beach immediately exploded with fire sparks as the sounds of Explosive Talismans igniting resounded throughout the beach.

The power of Explosive Talisman was not as great as the Explosive Arrow of Red Flame, which was made with Fire Crystals, but it could still deal an incredible amount of damage. For every explosion of these talismans, there would be dozens of barbarians devoured by the fierce flames. Half of them would be instantly killed by the explosion, and the other half would be seriously wounded.

The rain of arrows didn't seem to stop, over three thousand barbarians on the sandy beach were killed by the explosion of those talismans, and another three thousand of them were badly injured. As for the remaining four thousand barbarians, more than half of them were wounded by ordinary arrows. However, all the arrows were stained with deadly poison, so those barbarians who were wounded by the arrow would eventually

die as their bodies turned black.

"Attack!" Yan Bugui let out a long scream. In an instant, a greenish figure appeared on his back. It was the shadowy figure of Wind Breaking Wolf. With the appearance of the beast soul, his speed and strength immediately increased, then turned into a green shadow. With his sword flashing, he thrust himself into the crowd of barbarians.

Dozens of vigorous Scouting Officers let out screams at the same time. All of them had a greenish light appear on their backs. The greenish light was the same shadowy figure of Wind Breaking Wolves. The followed closely behind Yan Bugui and charged into the crowd of barbarians, green light flashing and wolves howling. It really looked like a pack of hungry wolves were charging their prey.

Lu Chengfeng trembled when he saw that. He stared into the sky and breathed out a long sigh, full of jealousy, "Dear heavens, all the Scouting Officers are beast warriors! The legend is true! How much wealth is required to cultivate so many demon beasts?"

Wu Qi followed closely behind Yan Bugui and dashed out from where he was hiding. With a loud laugh, he said, "How much wealth? Why does this matter? You don't have much money, master!"

Wu Qi said this and then laughed, drawing out his sword. Hish eyes were bright as he dashed toward the slowly dropping milky white pearl. He had set his eyes on this precious item long ago. It was the product of three thousand eight hundred years of the gathering of natural essence energy and water elemental energy by the Innate Water Serpent.

“Should anyone attempt to snatch this from me, I will show them no mercy!” Wu Qi’s eyes turned green, and a strong killing intent erupted from his body. It was so strong that almost became visible to the naked eye.

With a metallic clanking sound, Lu Chengfeng drew his soft longsword out, running after Wu Qi while laughing out loud at the same time. He could tell what Wu Qi’s target was, therefore he had immediately drawn out his sword and stood on guard behind Wu Qi. Zhang Wu and Hu Wei had their crossbows gripped tightly, standing beside Lu Chengfeng and keenly watching those warriors who came after them.

The frenzied roar of a beast resounded among the barbarians, who had suffered heavy casualties. All kinds of colorful bright lights were blinking around as over thirty barbarian beast warriors, who all had the same wild beast figure on their backs, charged out while cursing loudly, they immediately ran head to head with Yu Bugui and a few other Scouting Officers. The loud impact sounds of weapons and body slamming made anyone who heard it feel pain in their ears. Both groups had unleashed their full strength and the strongest skills. In just the first round of fighting, fifteen barbarians and nine Scouting Officers had been sent flying by their opponents while bleeding everywhere.

Yan Bugui roared out crazily, “Follow me and charge! I will Handsomely reward those who perform deeds of merit. Those who avoid the fight or are slow to respond, I’ll have all of your family members killed!”

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan immediately shouted out, in shrill voices, “Charge! Charge! Charge! Attack!”

The atmosphere quickly became wild. When hearing Yan Bugui’s

promise of handsome reward, or threat of death, all of these warriors began to charge forward with their full strength. While running, these warriors quickly reloaded their crossbows. Before they had reached the barbarians, these warriors had fired another two rounds of bolts, killing another few hundred barbarian fighters, including seven barbarian beast warriors.

When these barbarians had their worship ceremony, they had their people lining up too close to each other. Therefore, when they were attacked by torrents of crossbow bolts, their casualties were huge. However, there was still nearly three thousand barbarians who could fight, although all of them were lightly wounded. They had begun to group up and form a defensive line on the path toward a cliff.

After waiting for these barbarians to form their defensive line, Yan Bugui stopped running and took out his Exorcism Crossbow of Red Flame, hastily loading it with once again. When he did that, he simply shouted out, “This is the last Explosive Bolt of Red Flame! Brothers, charge!”

The bowstring released, and a beam of red light shot out and fell behind the barbarian’s defensive line. Those packed barbarians, who were holding their position in front of the cliff, had, once again, been devoured by a fierce flame. This time, nearly sixty percent of the barbarian fighters were turned into chunks of meat by the explosion. Yan Bugui put his crossbow back in his magical storage bag, then he drew out his sword and thrust it toward the huge cave at the foot of the mountain.

Ear-splitting sounds came from above them. On a cliff, a hundred feet above the ground, a few hundred barbarian teenagers were popping their heads out from the caves. These teenagers had not yet reached adulthood, but they already possessed enough strength to pull the bow

strings made from tree veins, shooting out the poisonous arrows that Wu Qi had seen before.

Yan Bugui and the other Scouting Officers were suddenly covered with blinking green lights. Then a powerful airflow suddenly shot out from beneath their feet, giving them a sudden increase in speed so they could sprint into the cave underneath the cliff. The few dozen warriors following behind them didn't pay enough attention to the incoming arrows. They were quickly hit by these deadly arrows, all of them decaying into blackish chunks of meat in a few seconds.

But these warriors' charging speed was really fast too. In just a few leaps and dashes, they had jumped into the surviving barbarians and started the cruel fight again. Those barbarian teenagers standing on top of the cliff dared not to shoot any arrows again. They could only stare blankly at the battlefield below.

With this short moment of hesitation, the ferocious Yan Bugui and his men had reached the top of the cliff. With the green light on his back blinking rapidly, Yan Bugui swung his sword and jumped into the middle of these barbarian teenagers. The slaughter had begun. For each swing of his sword, there would be a few feet of sword light emitting from the tip of Yan Bugui's sword. These young barbarians could never defend themselves from the attack of an elite Scouting Officer. In the time it took to take a few breaths, all these few hundred young barbarians had been killed.

Wu Qi was dashing forward. Within a few seconds he had come to stand beside the completely mashed corpse of the giant serpent.

Wu Qi extended his hand forward in mid-air and unleashed his Hand of

Web. The invisible whirlpool of air had pulled the serpent pearl into Wu Qi's palm. Wu Qi had his five fingers pressed and squeezed on the human head size serpent pearl, continuously injecting his innate energy into it. When the serpent pearl was infused with human energy, it immediately shrank from the size of human head to a size that allowed Wu Qi to grip it with his palm.

At this moment, the milky white serpent pearl had shrunk and concentrated into something that looked like a sapphire, glowing and emitting a charming water ripple endlessly. After sensing the massive amount of water elemental energy contained within the serpent pearl, Wu Qi couldn't help himself and let out a loud laugh. After that, he immediately tucked it into a secret pocket on his chest.

A heat wave hit Wu QI from behind. Lord Flame was waving his bloody palms and striking toward Wu Qi's back.

"Little bastard, a natural treasure like this is not something that you can dare to put your hands on! Give it to me, now!"

Lord Flame's eyes were glowing green. The pearl of the Innate Water Serpent, although useless for Lord Flame, who was cultivating with fire elemental skill, could still be used to exchange for other kinds of treasures! According to Lord Flame's estimation, this Innate Water Serpent pearl was worth at least one hundred times more than all that he had in the magical storage bag, which had been stolen.

Following the sound of a sword swinging, Lu Chengfeng struck out with his long sword. The sword was carrying a greenish light and thrusting toward Lord Flame's back at an extremely fast speed.

Lord Flame waved his palm back, unleashing a fierce flame, which seemed to touch the sky. Lu Chengfeng's soft sword instantly turned red hot, bending toward the ground like a soft skin snake. A well-made razor sharp weapon had been turned into scrap metal in an instant. The cloth on Lu Chengfeng's chest had caught on fire. He quickly fell back, but he didn't forget to take out three narrow needles and, with a wave of his hand, he threw these needles toward Lord Flame's heart, waist, and tailbone at the same time.

Zhang Hu and Hu Wei were both following closely behind Lu Chengfeng. They, too, wanted to help Wu Qi get this serpent pearl. Although Lord Flame's attack was sudden, they quickly responded to it, both raising up their nine bolt crossbow and shooting out eighteen bolts toward Lord Flame.

Lord Flame was extremely angry. He roared out, "Good, good, you have now given me the opportunity to kill all of you!"

Grabbing toward the serpent pearl on Wu Qi's hand, Lord Flame waved his left sleeve and unleashed a twenty foot long fire snake toward Zhang Hu and Hu Wei.

The eighteen bolts, which were made from pure steel, were melted by the fire snakes and turned into liquid. the fire snakes continued thrusting toward Zhang Hu and Hu Wei, forcing them to roll continuously on the ground. Eventually, they were able to dodge the attack of fire snakes. Both fire snakes fell onto the ground. They were so hot that they simply melted the sand, turning it into molten glass.

Lord Flame burst out in a victorious laugh, his fingertips almost touching the serpent pearl held by Wu Qi.

Suddenly, a strange smile appeared on Wu Qi's face. A bright blue light blinked in his palm as he quickly tucked the serpent pearl into Lord Flame's palm.

Chapter 45 - Got it

While laughing out wildly, Lord Flame gripped the serpent pearl in his hand, but, in an instant, his expression changed dramatically, and his body suddenly stiffened.

There were all kinds of strange and weird skills, even numerous unorthodox skills, recorded within the Scroll of Stealing. There was even one skill that taught how to use one's internal energy to ignite the inner core of soul beasts, making them become explosive. After Wu Qi injected a thread of innate water energy into the once stable serpent core, the massive energy contained within it immediately started exploding, just like when a fire spark falls right into a barrel of gunpowder.

The massive water elemental energy carried a shivering cold breeze as it rumbled, like a fierce tidal wave. Carrying a subtle sound of roaring, it leaped into Lord Flame's body. As the result, Lord Flame's palm was immediately covered with a white frost. There were even tiny bits of ice crystals starting to spread across his body.

In the time it took to take a single breath, the fearful frost had completely frozen Lord Flame, turning him into an ice statue.

The water element and the fire element were rivals, and the Innate Water Serpent, who had lived in this lake for nearly three thousand eight hundred years, probably had a similar cultivation level to Lord Flame, which was the Embryonic Breath tier of the Xiantian Realm. However, because the Innate Water Serpent's body was simply too huge, an over three hundred foot long body, the water elemental energy stored within

its body was at least a thousand times more than the internal energy Lord Flame had.

It was like putting out a fire match with a huge bucket of water. The fire elemental energy in Lord Flame's body was vanished in an instant. At the same time, his body couldn't withstand the massive amount of energy from the serpent pearl. Therefore he was killed instantly by the cold frost.

Wu Qi had a sneer on his face and snatched back the serpent pearl. He unleashed Hand of Web and started to pull back all the water elemental energy that had flowed into Lord Flame's body. Although some of the energy was consumed to kill Lord Flame, it was nothing compared to the total amount of energy.

With a slap on Lord Flame's chest, Wu Qi shattered his frozen heart into pieces. After that, he circulated the Hand of Web and the energy and blood essence in Lord Flame's body, which had yet to disappear, immediately changed direction, turning into a bright shining red thread that shot into Wu Qi's palm.

After breaking through to the Respiration tier of the Xiantian realm, the amount of energy and blood essence Wu Qi could absorb had increased from 1/1000 to 1/100. Although Lord Flame was cultivating with an evil skill, his energy and blood essence was still pretty strong. It was at least a hundred times stronger than Wu Qi's. The 1/100 energy and blood essence Wu Qi had stolen from Lord Flame was almost equal to the total amount of energy he had right now.

As the explosive energy was quickly circulated through his body, Wu Qi tucked the serpent pearl into his secret pocket, then, with a powerful kick, he sent the dead Lord Flame a hundred feet away. He glanced at Lu

Chengfeng and the others, who were stupefied by what they saw. He waved at them and signaled them to move quickly.

A few other warriors, who were also thirsting for the serpent pearl, had come near to Wu Qi. They had been stunned by witnessing Lord Flame get killed by some unknown skill. This had freaked them out, so they quickly turned around and started fleeing for their lives. Only a Xiantian realm cultivator could kill another Xiantian realm cultivator. All of these warriors were only at the peak of the Houtian realm. Do you think that any of them had the guts to fight with Wu Qi now?

"Kill them, don't let them tell anybody!" Wu Qi grabbed a heavy barbarian blade from the ground. With a swing, he unleashed a sword beam from the blade, cutting three of the men in half. Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Hu, and Hu Wei sprinted forward at the same time, killed another two of the fleeing warriors.

This place had turned into a chaotic battlefield. The warriors brought by Yan Bugui were having a tough battle with all the barbarians. Although Wu Qi's fight seemed like it had taken quite a long time, it had actually only taken a few seconds. Wu Qi and a few others jumped into the battle like nothing had happened, pretending they were fighting with barbarians all the while. Oddly enough, nobody really noticed that they had just killed Lord Flame.

Both Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan were giving orders to their guards, not far away from Wu Qi, asking them to slaughter their way toward the cave at the foot of the mountain. The promise of a handsome reward from Yan Bugui had put both of them in a frenzy. Only the duo truly knew what it really meant when a Scouting Officer promised a handsome reward.

Wu Qi threw away the heavy barbarian blade in his hand and then immediately picked up a lightweight blade, which he found lying beside a dead warrior. He swung the blade few times and quickly killed twelve barbarian fighters in front of him. Wu Qi had broken through to the Respiration tier of the Xiantian level. Unless there were more than a hundred peak Houtian warriors jointly attack him at the same time, none of these peak Houtian warriors could be his match.

After a few seconds of fighting, Wu Qi had killed more than hundred of the barbarians. It was like he was just slaughtering some chickens. He approached the cave together with Lu Chengfeng, Zhang Hu, and Hu Wei. Wu Qi let out a loud shout, “Master Yan, my young master has brought us here to provide support!”

Yan Bugui’s voice came from a cave on a higher level, “Good! Kill those who gets in your way and come to me! I’ll give you credit for top merit! Kill these damn barbarians!”

With a loud banging sound, a fireball burst out from a cave a thousand feet above the ground. It looked like Yan Bugui had just used another explosive talisman. Dozens of young barbarians who haven’t reached their adulthood were pushed out from the cave by the explosion, screaming as they fell down.

Wu Qi was laughing out loud, and he swung the blade in his hand and killed another dozen barbarians. After that, he pressed his palm on their bodies and absorbed a huge amount of energy and blood essence from them. Wu Qi hadn’t completely absorbed the energy and blood essence from Lord Flame, therefore he just gathered all these barbarian’s energy and blood essence in the middle of his left palm, making his left palm expand to larger and larger sizes. It started emitting a terrifying bright shining bloody red light.

Suddenly Wu Qi heard the shrill scream of an ape coming from behind him. In next second, he saw a barbarian beast warrior had approached him, throwing a long pike toward his head. On the back of this beast warrior was a globe of blinking black rays of light, and within the globe was a ten foot tall black ape. The long pike quickly approaching Wu Qi was made from some unknown black colored metal. It was so massive that, even before it hit Wu Qi, it had sent a ferocious breeze that made Lu Chengfeng, and the few others who followed behind Wu Qi, feel intense pressure and they started having difficulty breathing.

Wu Qi glared at the barbarian beast warrior. He circulated half of the energy and blood essences he just absorbed into the middle of his palm and struck out forcefully with it. A two feet tall bloody palm was unleashed from his palm, clashing onto the long pike together with a freezing cold.

The long pike was broken instantly by the wild wind of the huge palm. The barbarian beast warrior was hit in the center of his chest by Wu Qi's huge bloody palm. In an instant, his chest was splattered into pieces.

The sound of shrill scream from the ape resounded throughout the scene. The shadowy black ape, who had been behind the barbarian beast warrior, leaped up high into the sky. Wu Qi, injecting his innate water energy into the blade, shot out a bright sword beam from the tip of the blade and impaled the heart of this black ape. The soul of this black ape instantly shattered into pieces and flew out in all directions. Wu Qi unleashed a secret skill of the Scroll of Stealing and absorbed all the tiny pieces of the soul, purifying them with his innate water energy and merging them into his own soul.

Wu Qi could feel that his spirit was strengthened, and all his five senses had been improved at the same time. He let out a loud happy laugh and, using his left arm, he killed another eighteen barbarian fighters. At the same time, he absorbed their energy and blood essence and kept them within his left palm. Then he brought Lu Chengfeng and a few others further into the cave.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan had both also brought their guards into the cave, following closely behind Wu Qi.

Lu Quyuan stared at Lu Chengfeng's back. In a low voice, he cursed, "Top merit for you? Damn bastard, you don't deserve that! The top merit is ours!"

Under the lead of Wu Qi, their group soon cleared the way up to the upper cave, not encountering much resistance. Soon they had regrouped with Yan Bugui.

Right at this moment, there were only around twenty Scouting Officers left, and right in front of them was a huge cave, which was packed with over two hundred of barbarian fighters. These fighters were wearing finely made armor and there were even dozens of beast warriors. Behind these fighters, there was an altar made of pure gold. There were three four foot tall black stone tablets placed neatly on top of it.

"Whoever can get those three stone tablets for me, I'll give him the top merit for this mission!" Yan Bugui was currently covered with blood and his eyes had turned red after a crazy killing spree. He continued and said, "The Chief General has put a price on these stone tablets for over a hundred years. Those who can get him the stone tablets, will be rewarded with being made the lord of a land!"

Lord of a land!

Lu Chengfeng, Liu Suifeng, and Lu Quyuan gasped at the same time. The meaning of becoming the lord of a land was synonymous to that piece of land become the land of inheritance for his own family. This was was completely different from becoming the governor of a province.

Also, the size of a piece of land rewarded by the Great Yan Dynasty would be vastly larger than a piece of land rewarded by some kingdoms. Normally, the land rewarded by the Great Yan Dynasty would be a few times bigger, in terms of size. No matter the population or the tax income, all of them were much stronger than those kingdoms.

“Wu Qi!” Lu Chengfeng shouted out loud.

Wu Qi let out a scream at the top of his voice, and circulated all of his internal energy, merging it with all the energy and blood essences that he had absorbed just now and turning them into a frightening explosive power. The energy was so huge, even Wu Qi, who had strengthened his meridians nine times, couldn't withstand it, and some veins and acupoints on his palm broke and tore apart under the strain. The intense pain even made Wu Qi bleed from his eyes.

“Go!”

Wu Qi shouted out loud and shot out a bloody red beam from his palm. The bloody red beam had a diameter of over ten feet and was about a hundred feet long. It was filled with the pungent smell of blood and the intense freezing cold contained within had made the temperature in the

cave drop by several dozen degrees, making some weak fighters shiver and start trembling.

The bloody red beam fell right in the middle of the pack of barbarian fighters, where it exploded. Countless thumb-sized bloody red beams shot out from the center of explosion, instantly eviscerating at least a hundred barbarian fighters, and injuring all the other barbarians by punching holes in their bodies.

After unleashing the attack, Wu Ql had depleted his innate water energy, so he was so weak right now that he could barely stand up straight. He took a deep breath, and the serpent pearl hidden in his secret pocket immediately unleashed an endless stream of cold energy into his body, replenishing all his energy to normal level and, at the same time, making it purer and stronger than before.

Liu Suifeng was shouting out, “Lord Flame, Lord Flame!”

Nobody response to his call. Lord Flame had been killed, how could he response to this call?

While laughing out loud, Yan Bugui lead all his tired and injured subordinates and engaged in another tough fight with those barbarian beast warriors. Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan, at the same time, ordered their guards to shoot with arrows,

Wu Qi sprinted forward, like a wild wind,quickly grabbed up the three stone tablets, and placed them on his shoulder. These stone tablets were made from some unknown material, so, while they were hard and solid, they were pretty lightweight. The total weight of the three of them was

only thirty pounds.

Kicking away two of Liu Suifeng's guards, who wanted to snatch the stone tablets from him, Wu Qi yelled out, "Master Yan, let's go!"

Yan Bugui let out a loud laugh and, with a stern tone, shouted, "We've got it! bring along the bodies of our men. Let's retreat!"

All the Scouting Officers clustered around Wu Qi, quickly retreating from the cave while retrieving the dead bodies of their colleagues along the way.

From the forest afar, the faint sounds of beating drums and blaring horns could be heard.

Chapter 46 - Run for Lives

"Run!"

After everyone came out from the cave, Yan Bugui immediately shouted out loud, ordering everyone to retreat. All the warriors who were still fighting with the almost insane barbarians, began to gather up and followed closely behind Yan Bugui and the big group of men who had surrounded Wu Qi, running toward the path where they came from.

After getting hit severely by Explosive Talismans and Exorcism Crossbow of Red Flame, together with dozen rounds of arrows shower, there were only around eight hundred barbarian hunters who could remain standing. On the other side, there was only around three hundred warriors who could retreat without any wounds on their body. Although those barbarians were suffered great losses, but the warriors who came together with Yan Bugui were not much better than them, they too experienced some serious casualties.

With the help from few guards, Liu Suifeng was running for his life with somewhat quick, yet clumsy, steps. While running, he kept on staring on the three stone tablets on Wu Qi's shoulder. It seemed as if fire was going to burst out from his eyes at any moment. Lu Quyuan had a short dagger tightly gripped within his palm. There were a few times that he almost couldn't hold himself and wanted to throw the dagger at Wu Qi's back, but when he looked at Yan Bugui and Lu Chengfeng, who were running close to Wu Qi, Lu Quyuan just didn't have the courage to do it.

"Damn it! He got top credit!" Lu Quyuan complained to Liu Suifeng in a

low voice.

Liu Suifeng had an awful expression and tightly clenched his fists, praying hard in his mind and hoping that a lightning bolt would come from the sky now and smite Wu Qi. He turned his head around angrily, but was immediately shocked and terrified, as he saw the dead body of Lord Flame, which was laying on the ground not far away. The body was covered with a thin layer of frost and looked quite tragic.

Liu Suifeng's body suddenly trembled and he almost tripped over his own feet.

Old Devil was badly wounded, as his backbone was broken into pieces. If a miracle didn't happen, he would be a disabled man for the rest of his life. Now Lord Flame was dead... How was he going to answer to his father, Lord Puyang when he returned? With his father's status and power, their family could only worship a couple of Xiantian level cultivator, and Liu Suifeng had spent quite a bit of effort in order to bring two Embryonic Breath tier Xiantian realm cultivators with him on this trip.

[ED: As a reminder, they 'worship' these Xiantian realm cultivators and, in turn, retain their services. In my mind, they are just paying them a lot of money and treating them with the utmost respect.]

"I'm doomed!" Liu Suifeng's face turned pale. He had now lost all of his strength and could only depend upon his guards to drag him along so they could run for their lives.

Sensing the evil intentions from Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan, Wu Qi turned his head around and bared his teeth, giving both of them a smile. Liu Suifeng was still staring blankly at the dead body of Lord Flame, and

didn’t respond to Wu Qi’s smile. As for Lu Quyuan, he panicked and hid his right hand behind his back, which was still gripping the short dagger tightly.

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes and twitched his lips, a killing intention jumping on his face.

The group of men kept running for their lives. A few hundred barbarian fighters were chasing behind of them, roaring and yelling angrily. A few seriously wounded barbarian beast warriors stood up among some dead bodies, their body surrounded by strange fire-like airwaves. It seemed that they were chasing behind them with their last drops of energy. The drum beating sound kept coming closer and closer. One could even hear sound of animals running in the forest.

Run! Run for their lives! Finally, Wu Qi and the others had run past the Grand White Gold Dagger Formation,which Lu Chengfeng had set up on the sandy beach.

At this point in time, the few hundred barbarian fighters had almost caught up with them, and the sky above them had suddenly turned dark as a large flock of red feather vultures let out shrill cries. They had flown from a nearby mountain, quickly carrying a few barbarians to attack them. Each vulture had a wingspan of at least seventy to eighty feet, and was carrying three to five short bird tribe barbarians on their backs, who were pulling bowstring and preparing to strike.

“Activate the formation!” Yan Bugui roared out madly, “If we escape the attack from these bird barbarians, we will have a sixty percent of chance to get out of here alive!”

Lu Chengfeng let out a long howl, bit his tongue, and spit out an arrow of blood, which hit precisely onto one of the pillars which was buried under the sandy beach. By activating the formation with his own blood essence, the three pillars exploded with dazzling bright white lights. At the same time, they shot out a thick layer of Grand White Gold Energy a few inches above the ground. The Grand White Gold Energy gathered by the formation this time was really thick. It was at least a hundred times thicker than when it was used back in the General's Office.

Lu Chengfeng kept forming seals with his fingers, activating the formation with his full strength and fastest speed. Also, he was using the most powerful method, which would ruin the pillars afterward to activate all the energy contained within three pillars in a single instant. Therefore, the three pillars exploded into a glaringly bright ball of light, which would blind anyone who stared into it. In the next second, all of them exploded and shattered into pieces.

An ear-splitting metal clanging sound was heard from the three foot thick Grand White Gold energy above the ground. At the same time, a few thousand palm-sized and crescent-shaped daggers appeared out of nowhere. Lu Chengfeng spit out another mouthful of blood essence toward the formation. Then he waved his hand and those few thousand daggers immediately produced a sharp swooshing sound, tearing apart the air in front of them and shooting toward the sky above, like a reverse meteor shower.

The sound of bodies being torn apart resounded through the air. As those five hundred huge vultures arrived in the sky above the group, they were immediately welcomed by the Grand White Gold Dagger. The Grand White Gold Energy was one of the fiercest energies in the world. It was razor sharp and nothing could really resist its cut. Over three hundred

vultures had their bodies impaled by these daggers. These daggers traveled through the vultures bodies and came out from their backs, killing those bird tribe barbarians, who were sitting on the vultures.

Vultures were screaming and barbarians were howling and blood kept raining down from the sky above. With both eyes turning red, Lu Chengfeng pointed at the daggers in the sky and shouted, “Break!”

Following the sound of metal being torn apart, all of the daggers exploded at the same time, turning into millions of tiny sparks that shot in all directions. The rest of the vultures and bird tribe barbarians were hit by these sparks and their bodies were filled with holes, and fell down from the sky, screaming and howling all the way. Finally, all the vultures and bird tribe barbarians had been killed.

The dense sparks were like a sudden hailstorm, dropping down toward the ground at high speed, and producing a shrill swooshing sound. They ended up covering the entire group barbarian beast warriors and fighters, who were chasing behind them. The sparks covered an area of nearly a miles in diameter, and none of the barbarians could find a place to hide, not that there was any way they could hide from this attack. Their crude beastskin armor and iron armor couldn’t resist the attacks of these sparks and, in an instant, all these barbarians were hit and had been turned into meat paste.

Shrill cries resound from behind the cliff. Not long after that, from the cave where Wu Qi and the rest ran out from, countless of old and weak barbarians, together with women and children, bolted out while carrying all kinds of crude weapons in their hand. These were barbarian children, who just learned how to run, and old barbarians, who could barely move. All of them ran out from the cave while tightly clenching their teeth, chasing toward the direction of Wu Qi and the others.

But the speed of Wu Qi and his rest was fast. How could these old and weak barbarians catch up with them? However, all these old and weak barbarians had bloodshot red eyes and were unleashing a killing intent, which made Wu Qi, and the others who had fled miles away, feel as if there was some needles poking into their backs.

After exploding the formation and killed few hundred vultures and bird barbarians, Lu Chengfeng let out a satisfying laugh and tried to continue his escape, but he almost tripped on his own feet, as he had lost all his strength. By continuously spitting out blood essence, and at the same time driving the Grand White Gold Dagger with his full force, Lu Chengfeng had already drained all of his internal energy, and thus suffered from a great loss of blood essence.

Right at this moment, he was dizzy, close to fainting, and his body was empty, without even the slightest bit of internal energy. How could he continue running?

Wu Qi grabbed over Lu Chengfeng and carried him on his shoulder, pressing his left palm on Lu Chengfeng's back and injecting the energy and blood essence that he absorbed, but never 'digested', into Lu Chengfeng's body. Lu Chengfeng immediately felt his body become hot, a massive amount of energy and blood essence flowing into his body. This made his eyes brighten as he felt packed with boundless power.

"Nice!" Lu Chengfeng couldn't hold himself and kept praising, "Wu Qi, what kind of skill are you using? This feels amazing!"

Wu Qi twisted his lips and, with a low voice, shouted, "Shut up! I am

using my own energy to replenish your consumption. Of course its enjoyable for you!”

Lu Chengfeng immediately shut his mouth and then focused on the blood essence and energy being injected into his body by Wu Qi, slowly he circulated them and replenishing his consumption. Under the impact of the massive amount of energy and blood essence, a few bottlenecks on Lu Chengfeng meridians, which had stopped him from progressing further in his cultivation, had begun to loosen.

Wild excitement flooded Lu Chengfeng. He could barely feel that the natural energies surrounding him had begun to flow into his body. This was something that only existed for those at the Xiantian realm. Lu Chengfeng simply ignored everything around him and focused all his attentions on his body, circulating his internal energies and mixing them together with the hot airflow being injected by Wu Qi’s palm. Thus he started attacking the few remaining bottlenecks in his meridians, which were all that separated a person being considered to be in the Xiantian realm.

Wu Qi carried Lu Chengfeng and three stone tablets and ran into the forest.

Yan Bugui let out a few long cries and then he simply waved both hands and had all three hundred warriors divide themselves into ten small groups, each group lead by few Scouting Officers. Yan Bugui brought seven of his subordinates,Wu Qi, Lu Chengfeng, Liu Suifeng and a few other men who came here together with him, retreating by following the same road by which they came here.

No one had any objections toward Yan Bugui’s decision of separating

the group into smaller groups. Even an idiot could understand that the more groups they had, the greater the chances of them escaping. if everyone stuck together in a single large group, all three hundred men running in the vast forest would just make for easy targets.

The rapid drum beating sound kept coming from far behind, and an ear-splitting horn resounded throughout the forest. It was like the entire forest and mountain had woken up.

While leading in front, Yan Bugui said, “Luckily we had slaughtered all the villages on our way here, or else, if we are blocked by these villages even just for a short time, all of us would have died here.”

Another Scouting Officer twitched his lip and, with a bitter smile, said, “Judging by their restless movements, I think dozens of the largest nearby barbarian clans sent their men here to chase us. Sigh, it is all because we took these black stone tablets! Those barbarians treat these tablets as if they were gifts given by their God!”

Yan Bugui sneered and said, “Any treasures in this world belongs to those who have the strength to keep them. These barbarians, what makes them worthy of these treasures? Increase your speed! As long as we can leave the forest alive, then we’ll have the stone tablets to submit to the Chief General. He will reward all of you handsomely! As for the promised land, we’ll split it according to your contribution!”

Once again, Yan Bugui mentioned about the reward of the land, Lu Chengfeng, Liu Suifeng, and Lu Quyuan all had their eyes brighten. That’s a piece of land given by the Great Yan Dynasty! The mission of robbing the black stone tablets, Lu Chengfeng and Liu Suifeng felt that they were both the biggest contributors. Wu Qi, who carried the stone tablets, was

the right-hand man of Lu Chengfeng, and those elite guards brought by Liu Suifeng were the ones who rushed into the caves and killed the remaining barbarians who were guarding the stone tablets.

As for those warriors recruited from Little Meng City, they were just some supporting characters in this big show. For them, it would be good enough if they could be rewarded with some gold. The promised land, even if they had to share it with Yan Bugui and his Scouting Officers, was still the most valuable thing.

Liu Suifeng suddenly let out a loud shout. Then he leaped forward from where he stood and grabbing at the three stone tablets on Wu Qi's shoulder.

"Wu Qi, the credit belongs to everyone! Don't try to take it all for yourself!"

Chapter 47 - Killing the Marquis

Seeing Liu Suifeng trying to seize the stone tablets, Yan Bugui frowned and yelled out, “Damn it, stop!”

Yan Bugui felt anger and a little bit of panic. There were countless barbarians chasing behind them right now. Within this vast forest, those barbarians were like fish in water, having their combat capabilities almost doubled. On the opposite side of this fight, the peoples of the Great Yan Dynasty performed better outside of the forest. Once they were in the forest, it would be great if they could use even half of their combat abilities. Therefore, everyone should work together and escaped from this forest. Only then they would have the chance to receive their rewards. By attempting to usurp the reward for himself, this Liu Suifeng would get them all killed!

Wu Qi’s response was extremely fast.Just as Liu Suifeng struck, he jumped up and rolled forward, kicking backward with his full force.

The kick slammed hard onto Liu Suifeng’s chest, casuing him to cry out in pain as blood dribbled out of his mouth. He was sent nearly a hundred feet away by the powerful kick, and had his head knocked against a huge tree. He was lucky to survive the collision.

Lu Quyuan let out a shrill shout, “Wu Qi, you dare to hurt the Marquis?”

Wu Qi glared fiercely at Lu Quyan and, without saying a word, continued running fast while carrying Lu Chengfeng.

A few of the guards of Liu Suifeng hastened to the rescue of their master, who had fainted after being knocked into the huge tree. At the same time, nearly thirty personal guards of Liu Suifeng raised up their nine-bolt crossbows and aimed at Wu Qi, preparing to pull the triggers. Wu Qi, on the other side, was moving his body swiftly. Just as those guards were raising their crossbows, he quickly jumped and hid behind a huge tree.

Zhang Hu and Hu Wei were following closely behind Wu Qi. Both of them had a same nine-bolt crossbows in their hands, and were aiming back at those personal guards of Liu Suifeng.

After the bloody fight back at the barbarian encampment by the lake, many of Liu Suifeng's guards had been killed. Seeing this opportunity, Zhang Hu and Hu Wei had grabbed nine-bolt crossbows for themselves.

Looking at what happened, which would escalate into infighting soon, Yan Bugui unleashed a globe of green light behind him, and the Wind Breaking Wolf, which had appeared on his back, let out an angry roar into the air. Yan Bugui snapped, "Whoever dares to start a fight at this point and time, I'll abolish all the titles of his family. I, Yan Bugui, am a man of my word!"

Wu Qi extended his hand and pressed down on Zhang Wu and Hu Wei's hands. He laughing loudly, saying, "Master Yan, Wu Qi is a man who always follow the rules! Heaven as my witness, I have done nothing wrong! I did as you said, risking my life to snatch these three stone tablets from the barbarian altar!"

The seven Scouting Officers standing beside Yan Bugui released their Wind Breaking Wolves unleashed on their backs, standing in a straight line behind Wu Qi. These Scouting Officers blocked the path of Liu Suifeng's personal guards. Yan Bugui snapped again, "What Wu Qi said was correct, the stone tablets were snatched by him from those barbarians. Liu Suifeng, if you dare to act so absurdly again, I, Yan Bugui, will kill you right now!"

When Yan Bugui showed his temper, Liu Suifeng immediately lost his courage. He hastily ordered his guards to lower their weapons. After that, he proceeded to running tamely behind Yan Bugui. A few Scouting Officers were following closely beside Wu Qi, preventing any possible assault from Liu Suifeng.

Suddenly, Wu Qi felt a soft yet continuous force was pushing his palm from below. He looked and saw a faint flow of Qi was spiraling around Lu Chengfeng's body. Even an average human could see the faded white Metal energy and yellowish Earth energy that was slowly floating around Lu Chengfeng's body.

After getting the help from the energy and blood essence that Wu Qi injected into his body, Lu Chengfeng, who had been stuck at the peak of the Houtian realm for years, finally broke and entered into the Xiantian realm. Judging from the natural energies his body had started actively absorbing, he was actually cultivating with a double elemental skill, those elements obviously being the Earth and Metal elements. Also, his body had the properties of Earth and Metal as well.

Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyan's expressions became dark. Now Lu Chengfeng had become a Xiantian level cultivator? Putting aside Liu Suifeng, Lu Quyuan had thought of something suddenly: Would the Liyang Lu Family change their attitudes towards Lu Chengfeng because

of this? Will the status of Lu Quhai, the real eldest son of Liyang Lu Family, and also the elder brother of Lu Quyuan, be threatened because of this?

On the other side, Yan Bugui felt extremely happy for this. There were countless barbarians chasing behind them right now. This time, all these barbarians would definitely use their full strength and all available approaches to kill them. In this critical moment, having an extra Xiantian level cultivator, even if he was only at the Embryonic Breath tier of the Xiantian realm, would be an extra safety net for them!

“Young master Lu, congratulations! Breaking through to reach the Xiantian realm is a great achievement!” Yan Bugui immediately expressed his admiration to Lu Chengfeng.

All the other Scouting Officers were looking at Lu Chengfeng with envious looks. Although they were all beast warriors, since they had joined with the souls of Wind Breaking Wolfs, and, thus, were able to possess combat capabilities equal to the Respiration tier of the Xiantian realm, but their own cultivation level was still at the peak of the Houtian realm. They could, at most, be considered Pseudo Xiantian realm cultivators. It was totally different compared to Lu Chengfeng, who was a real Xiantian realm cultivator.

Lu Chengfeng let out a few loud laughs, he then held his fist and bowed deeply to Wu Qi, saying, “Brother Wu QI, from now on, you are my blood brother!”

Wu Qi grabbed Lu Chengfeng forcefully, also carrying the stone tablets, and started to sprint forward immediately. While running wildly himself, he shouted, “Stop acting so strange. If you want to be my blood brother, so be it, but we better run for our lives quickly. It sounds like something

dangerous is approaching!”

Lu Chengfeng turned around and listened carefully, and then his expression changed. He immediately grabbed Zhang Hu and Hu Wei, and sprinted forward, running for his life.

Now that Lu Chengfeng had broken through to the Xiantian realm, there was no more blockage in his meridians.Internal energy could now flow freely and continuously through his body. At the same time, natural energy from the surrounding area kept flowing into his body, replenishing his consumption. Therefore, even though he was carrying two adult men while running as fast as he could, he never felt tired. With a simple light breath, it was as if he was breathing in a river of energy. With a simple step forward, he could travel dozens of feet away. He felt as if he was running on the wind.

While enjoying the boost in strength and speed brought to him by breaking through to the Xiantian realm, Lu Chengfeng laughing out loud and said, “Wu Qi, from now on, I will share all my wealth with you!”

Yan Bugui glared fiercely at Liu Suifeng and Lu Quyuan, giving them a sharp glare. Only after that did he bring all the men and continue on their fleeing journey.

Not far behind of them, the angry roar of beasts were getting closer and closer. After about fifteen minutes later, three barbarian fighters who had black smoke rising from their bodies, caught up with them. They were riding on weird beasts, which could run above the ground by jumping and swinging from tree branch to tree branch.

The three weird beasts looked similar to the Raptors which Wu Qi was familiar with, but they were covered with dark black scales and had five razor sharp horns on top of their heads. Their muscular back legs had three toes only, but the nails were two feet long and shone brightly, like sharp blades.

The weird beasts were quickly advancing, as they used their back legs and kicked on the tree branches few feet above the ground, bouncing themselves forward. They would leave countless holes on the trees they passed. These beasts quickly approached the fleeing group, looking like three wild whirlwinds.

Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng had grabbed Zhang Hu and Hu Wei and were running at the front of the group. The ones in the back were the weakest personal guards of Liu Suifeng.

The three weird beasts leaped down from above at an extremely fast speed. They opened their mouths and spit out three jets of dark water. The pungent dark water jets spilled onto these slow personal guards. No one knew what was contained in the dark water, but it was far more corrosive than any acids they were aware of. These personal guards could only let out a few horrible screams. After that, all their skin and flesh were melted by the dark water, turning into some poisonous liquid. In an instant, they became a pile of bones and internal organs, sitting in a pool of poisonous liquid.

The weird beasts had shown their strength. The three barbarians howled at the same time, their voices shrill, like the hissing sound of some poison snake.

The howling of the three barbarians was like some sort of signal. At this

point in time, countless strange and exotic bugs started falling down from the huge trees above Wu Qi and others. Poisonous snakes, colorful caterpillars, scorpions. There was even a bug that looked like a stick insect, but was spitting out poisonous substances from its mouth. There were beetles who could shoot out deadly poison; centipedes covered with thorns, and a poisonous moth as big as a huge bucket. There were at least two to three thousand different kinds of poisonous bugs raining down from the sky.

Among these frightening bugs, there were two poisonous serpents that were over forty feet long.

Lu Quyuan, who was fleeing in disorderly manner, let out a frightened scream. A poisonous serpent dropped right on his back. In an instant, it coiled the tail around Lu Quyuan's body. With a powerful squeeze, Lu Quyuan's bones immediately produced some cracking sounds, and a few of his ribs were broken on the spot.

Luckily, Yan Bugui came to the rescue, swinging of his sword and unleashing a ray of light that cut the poisonous serpent into a few pieces. Before the head of this ferocious serpent fell onto the ground, its razor sharp fangs cut slightly on Lu Quyuan's left shoulder, making a tiny cut. In an instant, Lu Quyuan's left shoulder expanded like a balloon, turning black and shining under the reflection of the sunlight.

Yan Bugui shook his head helplessly. Wwithout saying anything, he chopped off Lu Quyuan's shoulder straight away. After that, he grabbed Lu Quyuan and threw him to Lu Chengfeng, "Young master Lu, please take care of your brother."

Extending his hand and grabbing Lu Quyuan, who had lost his left arm

and was screaming in extreme pain, Lu Chengfeng shook his head, then pressed on few acupoint near Lu Quyuan's shoulder. The blood spewing from his shoulder slowed down to a trickle in response to this.

While waving his sleeves and slapping away those poisonous bugs, Wu Qi turned around. With an odd expression, he sneered at Lu Quyuan, saying, "Sixth young master of Lu Family, you better be obedient and show some respect to my young master, or else we just might feed you to those huge serpents!"

Lu Quyuan was so scared that his face turned pale. He grabbed onto Lu Chengfeng's hand and, with a nearly hoarse voice, said, "Elder brother, I'll listen to what you tell me from now on and do whatever you say!"

Yan Bugui, together with his subordinates, unleashed their green Wind Breaking Wolves, bolting toward the three barbarians behind them while swinging their swords.

The three weird beasts leaped a few steps forward, once again opening their mouth and spitting out three jets of dark water. With a wave of his arm, Yan Bugui unleashed a few beams of sword light from his sword, countering and forcing these three dark water jets back to where they came from, which made them spill and splash all over the three weird beasts and the barbarians riding on their back.

The dark water had no effect on three weird beasts, but the three barbarians, who were riding on their backs, let out a horrible howls, instantly turned into piles of poisonous meat.

The weird beasts roared angrily and leaped forward, striking their razor

sharp horns at Yan Bugui and his men.

A loud banging sound resounded throughout the place, and the three weird beasts had their skulls crushed into a complete mess by the sword attacks. At the same time, Yan Bugui and his men were forced back by the massive force of the impact, making the scene become very chaotic.

A cruel bright light shone in Wu Qi's eyes. He took a look at Liu Suifeng, who was hiding behind his guards, shouting at them, and then snapped his fingers. A tiny bug with black poisonous hairs all over its body was falling down from above.Wu Qi snapped his finger and pushed the bug, shooting it out at a lighting fast speed and making it fall into Liu Suifeng's ear.

The poisonous hairs of this tiny bug shot out from its body and penetrated Liu Suifeng's skull. The deadly poison took effect immediately, and Liu Suifeng fell to the ground without making a noise.

All his personal guards cried out in alarm, "Young master!"

Wu Qi narrowed his eyes while flashing a toothless smile. Now, no one else would try to take away his contribution.

Chapter 48 - Furious

Within an open space in the forest, a group of battle-scarred men were laying around in shabby clothes.

It had been more than thirty hours since they heard the roars and cries of the barbarians and their animals. Those barbarians' combat strength was definitely boosted in the forest. If not for Yan Bugui and his seven subordinates, who were beast warriors, together with Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng, who were both as the Xiantian realm cultivators, they would have long since been killed by those barbarians.

Under a huge tree, the last five right-hand men of Liu Suifeng were staring blankly at the ground. The naked dead body of Liu Suifeng was placed on the ground, while Wu Qi was working restlessly in mixing dozens of herbs he gathered from the woods, making them into a mixture that could prevent Liu Suifeng's body from becoming rotten.

Twenty days had passed since they fled for their lives. Those right-hand men of Liu Suifeng just wouldn't agree to abandon his dead body. They just wanted to bring it out from forest, no matter what. Wu Qi was afraid the stinking smell of Liu Suifeng's dead body might attract those weird beasts that the barbarians used. That's why he took the initiative and embalmed the dead body.

"Although your death was slightly related to me, I worked so hard for you, so you still owe me a big favor!" While applying the mixture paste onto Liu Suifeng's dead body, Wu Qi thought in his mind, "To be buried with all the fragrance of these herbs,and not having to worry about

stinking in the slightest... You owe me a big favor. In your next life, you have to work for me like a cow!"

After a few restless hours, the dead body was embalmed. Wu Qi found himself a thick tree vein and cut it with his hand. Fresh water immediately flowed down from the cut side. Wu Qi grabbed a handful tiny fruits, which could be used as natural soap, and washed his hands. Then he pulled the tree vein to his mouth and drank a few mouthfuls of fresh water.

Under a tree near him, Old Devil, who had become skinny, like a skeleton, let out a few moans. He looked at Wu Qi in anticipation, hoping he could feed him some water. Wu Qi hesitated, but in the end, he still made a small cup with a huge leaf and fed a few mouthfuls of water to Old Devil.

The thirsty Old Devil greedily drank up all the water. Almost in tears, he said, "Misfortune tests the sincerity of friends. Wu Qi, my friend, I sincerely appreciate your help!"

Wu Qi looked at Old Devil, who had experienced all kinds of hardship along their journey, then he breathed out a heavy sigh, "Don't thank me for that. Even if there is a dog lying in front of me, I'll also feed it with some water and food. Sigh, this is my weakness actually, I have a soft heart!"

Standing up while shaking his head, Wu Qi walked toward Lu Chengfeng, he murmured, "Old Devil, you're not a good man, but why did I help you? I am just too soft hearted, I can't stand to see someone suffering in front of me. That's why I fed you some water. Also, your master, the Marquis, was the enemy of my young master. Since he is dead

now, why do I still need to help him cover the stinking smell of his body? I am just too soft hearted...”

When Old Devil heard what WU Qi said, his mind filled with a mix of emotions. After all, Wu Qi was the one who had fed him water. He could only stare at Wu Qi’s back with a complicated look on his face. At the same time, he was cursing the last five guards of Liu Suifeng. These men were busying handling the dead body of Liu Suifeng along the way, but neglected Old Devil, who was still alive, and treated him like a baggage. If not for Wu Qi, who occasionally fed him some water and food, he would have long since been dead by now.

Gazed at the guards maliciously, Old Devil swore in his mind, “Even if I don’t survive, I’ll drag the five of you together with me before I die.”

Wu Qi hastily returned to Lu Chengfeng who was sitting with his leg crossed and eyes closed, then he took the stone tablets and placed them on his shoulders.

Along the way, Wu Qi kept trying to crack the secrets of these black stone tablets, but there was no writing or symbols of any kind on it. He also couldn’t sense any energy ripples from within, and his divine senses were unable to penetrate the stone tablets and check what was inside. After making many attempts, he still had no idea why these stone tablets were so special.

Something that could make the Cheif General of the Great Yan Dynasty desire it so greatly that he would reward a huge piece of land for those who got it for him, must really be something extraordinary. Without sufficient abilities to get the good stuff within, Wu Qi had nothing to complain about.

Wu Qi had learned something valuable from the Scroll of Stealing: There are countless valuable things in this world, but not all of them will be yours. In order to master the art of stealing, the first lesson you must learn was how to give up. Those who didn't know how to give up would be attracted to everything in the world and end up causing themselves harm.

Patting forcefully on the stone tablets, Wu Qi jumped up from where he sat and said with a low voice, "Master Yan, I think we have spent enough time resting. Let's continue our journey. Just two more days and we will be able to leave this deadly forest."

Yan Bugui looked into the sky. The Sun was right over their heads and golden sunlight was peircing through the tree branches, turning into countless light beams, which brightened the forest. He nodded, stood up, and shouted, "Alright, if you don't want to get killed by those barbarians, pack up and move your asses now!"

The right-hand men of Liu Suifeng stood up without saying anything. Two of them carried Liu Suifeng's body with a simple stretcher, and another one roughly pulled up Old Devil and placed him on his shoulder. The group of men began their journey. The rude action of that right-hand man sent terrible pain throughout Old Devil's entire body. He groaned painfully and was filled with a crazy hatred, which could be seen in his eyes.

Lu Quyuan, who had lost one of his arms, grabbed tightly on Lu Chengfeng's sleeve with the other hand, scared that his elder brother wouldn't bring him along.

The terror of this forest had scared the shit out of Lu Quyuan. Liu Suifeng was killed by some unknown poisonous bugs, and his right-hand men were killed by those barbarians one after another one, through all kinds of strange methods. If not for Lu Chengfeng helping him a few times, Lu Quyuan's bone might have become a drum stick used by some barbarians. In this forest of terror, Lu Chengfeng was the only hope Lu Quyuan had to survive.

Wu Qi gazed at Lu Quyuan, who was trembling non-stop, then he walked closer to Lu Chengfeng and whispered, with a smile on his face, "I'll bet you a silver coin that after we leave this forest, the sixth brother of young master will immediately turn on you. What do you say?"

Lu Quyuan's body trembled, and he hastily spoke in a low voice, "No, how could I possibly do that! From now on, elder brother is my own blood brother. I'll listen to whatever elder brother tells me regarding any matters in the family!"

Lu Chengfeng let out a few hollow laugh, but he didn't say anything.

Wu Qi too laughed dryly, and dropped the topic.

The remainder of the return journey was smooth, except for one time where two giant vultures found them together. After a tough fight, and losing two more of Liu Suifeng's right-hand men, the group had finally left the forest which had devoured so many lives.

After two days of waiting at the rendezvous point, which was known to the other Scouting Officers, only six of the ten groups of men left the forest safely. All of them were, at most, a third of their original size. There

were only 17 of Yan Bugui's subordinates left. As for the huge crowd of warriors, only sixty-five of them came out from the forest alive.

After counting all the men and confirmed all the rest of them were killed within the forest, Yan Bugui let out a long sigh, faced the forest and shed a few tears at their loss. After that, his stern expression returned.

"Let's split up here! Record down the names of all the men, noting where they live. The rewards, which are based on your contribution, will be coming to you soon."

Taking the three black stone tablets from Wu Qi, Yan Bugui stare at Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng, and said, "The eldest son of Liyang Lu Family, Lu Chengfeng. You are the top contributor to this mission. Return and just wait for it. You'll be surprised soon."

Lu Chengfeng bowed respectful toward Yan Bugui, who returned the bow. After that, he had his subordinates record the names of the surviving warriors, then they left with the black stone tablets. The return journey from the Lu Kingdom to the capital of Great Yan Dynasty was a long one. They needed to cross seven kingdoms and take a long winding road. No matter how fast they could travel, it would still take them half a year to arrive at the capital.

The reward would take an additional year of time to arrive.

All the warriors were finally able to breathe out sighs of relief. They turned around and, facing the forest, at the same time all of them started to scream and yell at it. Although they had survived this forest of many terrors, after forcibly recruited by Scouting Officers, but the same forest

had buried many of their friends and partners.

Those who were still alive would get their share of rewards given by the Chief General of the Great Yan Dynasty. But for those who were killed, they were gone forever. At most, their family would get some pension, but nothing that was worth mentioning. However, the warriors who lived around in Little Meng City were mostly criminals, who lived their life at the edge of death. Many of them didn't have family at all. Once they were dead, a pension meant nothing for them.

After waiting for those surviving warriors to finish their yelling and screaming, Wu Qi kicked forcefully at Lu Chengfeng's leg, pointing toward those warriors and pushing Lu Chengfeng, who was having a foolish smile on his face, with his shoulder.

Lu Chengfeng quickly realized Wu Qu's intention. He held his fist and bowed deeply toward these warriors, saying, "Brave warriors, I feel ashamed to be the acting Mayor of Little Meng City. It was a great honor to fight with you all this time. However, after witnessing the great strength of all of you, I felt really sorry that you haven't found a place to achieve great things in life. Right now, I am in need of strong men that could aid me. I would gladly welcome you entering my service."

Wu Qi took a step forward and stood firmly beside Lu Chengfeng. With a smile on his face, he unleashed his Embryonic Breath tier of Xiantian level senses. The faded innate water energy turned into white water vapor and swirling around his body, the light pressure of a Xiantian cultivator had sent a tremble to all the warriors in front of him.

"A Xiantian cultivator!" These warriors stare at Wu Qi in respect and envy.

These warriors were all smart guys. They heard what Yan Bugui told Lu Chengfeng just now. There was a surprise reward waiting for Lu Chengfeng? He was the acting Mayor of a city. What kind of reward would be a surprise to him?

Without much effort from Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng, the thirty-seven surviving warriors immediately agreed to become Lu Chengfeng's men. As they were able to walk out from the forest of terror, these surviving warriors were either at the peak Houtian cultivation level or just step away from it. In an instant, Lu Chengfeng managed to increase his actual strength by gaining a few more powerful men as his servants. He was finally starting to look like a son from an influential family.

Laughing out loud, Lu Chengfeng happily lead all the men and returned to Little Meng City. They had been gone for two months. H wase really worried there would be something bad happened back in Little Meng City.

Proving his worry was true, when they were three miles away from Little Meng City, they saw Xiaohei was carrying his halberd. He was standing together with a large group of soldiers and were blocking all three city gates of Little Meng City, shouting and yelling for a fight.

Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng were shocked by what they saw. They immediately sprinted forward and asked what happened. When they heard what Xiaohei told them, both of them became furious.

Wu Qi let out a loud roar, and jumped up onto the tower of City Gate. With his leg, he kicked a few of Liu Suifeng's guards off the gate.

“Xiaohei, attack the city! Those who dare to fight back, show them no mercy!”

The furious Wu Qi had given out the order to attack the city!

Chapter 49 - Kill Everyone

Although Xiaohei was not a smart man, he still managed to report what had happened in the past two months to Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng, though he did it using the simplest words.

After Yan Bugui brought all strong warriors away from Little Meng City, Liu Suifeng's remaining personal guards, which were under the command of Liu Zhong, became the strongest force in Little Meng City. No matter whether it was their equipment, spirit, cultivation level or even the level of their training, this team of guards had the ability to defeat all of the several thousand City Guards.

Besides having such a powerful force, Liu Zhong also had the official documents and tokens of Liu Suifeng, which allowed him to supervise all the military-related affairs.

When Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng left Little Meng City, Liu Zhong became overbearing and domineering. He openly asked those auditors to make up some fraudulent transactions and blame them on Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng. After that, he burned all the original account books to ashes.

Then he bribed and threatened all the wealthy tradesmen in Little Meng City, asking them to frame Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng, and made up over a hundred crimes, which involved taking bribes, bending the law, abduction of innocent girls, disturbing the order of business, and much, much more. All of them had motives, evidence, and witnesses, and they all became undeniable cases.

Lastly, he called upon all those previous military officials, who were expelled by Wu Qi from the City Guards, asking them to stand out and blame countless crimes on Lu Chengfeng. Those crimes including the burglary case of coffer room, when Yi Yan was the mayor, and Lu Chengfeng had become the main culprit of them.

After spending almost a month's time, Liu Zhong had laid out an almost perfect trap. A trap full of crimes that could make Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng die a thousand times. Next, he immediately took out the token of the Supervisory Officer, preparing to take over the authority of Little Meng City's City Guards by force.

Those expelled City Guards officially became his footmen, one after another were following behind Liu Zhong happily to take control over the city.

Although Xiaohei was not a smart person, he had remembered Lu Chengfeng's order, and tried his best to hold back the City Guards and avoid fighting with Liu Zhong's men. But Liu Zhong just kept stepping over his limits. When Liu Zhong had lead his men and broken all the limbs of few City Guards who didn't want to follow his order, Meng Xiaobai, and the rest of the men from Meng Village, exploded in anger.

How could these simple and upright villagers from Meng Village be tolerant of someone like Liu Zhong? For the past month, all those messy matters had really pissed off these villagers. No one knew who was the first one to strike, but these villagers lead nearly thousand City Guards and clashed with the guards lead by Liu Zhong.

After the fight, over eight hundred City Guards were killed, seventy of whom were from Meng Village. On the other side, only a couple dozen of

Liu Zhong's guards were seriously wounded, and another dozen of them had some minor injuries. The powerful nine-bolts crossbows had caused great damage to the City Guards, and, at the same time, helped Liu Zhong's men conserve their manpower.

More than two hundred City Guards, including Meng Xiaobai, were captured and imprisoned. Liu Zhong had his men keep torturing these City Guards, and some of them were beaten to death. From time to time, Liu Zhong would ask his men to dragged a few dead bodies and hung them on top of the City Gate as a warning.

Since it was the villagers from Meng Village who 'lead the charge' against Liu Zhong, he furiously made up an accusation and claimed Lu Chengfeng and Wu Qi were trying to stage an armed rebellion with City Guards. Those ex-officials of the City Guards and some of the wealthy tradesmen within the city all signed their names on the accusation decree.

The incident became abominable when Liu Zhong lead a huge group of men to capture Laohei and Xiaohei. Xiaohei immediately brought all the City Guards and the other soldiers and ran out of the city. After that he went to the boot camp within the woods and called out all the new recruits, charging towards Little Meng City and besieged the city.

Although Xiaohei lead a huge group of soldiers, they lacked in training and equipment. Those personal guards, lead by Liu Zhong, were much more powerful than them, and had better equipment. They also obtained the help of some of the personal guards of the wealthy tradesmen, but, since they were outnumbered, they could barely hold their defense in the city.

Both parties dared not to strike carelessly, so it had been a standoff for the last seven days.

After learning of the situation, especially when he learned that the villagers from Meng Village were killed and Meng Xiaobai was imprisoned and tortured, Wu Qi was so furious that he exploded like a bomb. He immediately jumped onto the City Gate and kicked off a few guards,. Afterwards, he gave out the order to begin the siege.

Lu Chengfeng frowned when he learned the current situation. He gritted his teeth furiously and said, “The barbarians struck out for revenge revenge! They attacked Little Meng City and killed these few hundred personal guards of Marquis Liu. The city wall of Little Meng City was broken through by these barbarians and they killed many wealthy tradesmen within the city!”

Emitting a harsh killing intent, Lu Chengfeng snapped, “Begin the siege! Siege the city! No mercy for those who fight back!”

Xiaohei had waited for this moment long enough. After the order was given by Lu Chengfeng and Wu Qi, he swung his halberd and shouted out loud.

Over twenty thousand of City Guards roared at the same time, and started charging toward Little Meng City.

Wu Qi was like a wolf among sheep. He quickly proceeded to slaughter everyone on the city gate. He repeatedly struck out with both palms, each strike carrying a few hundred pounds of force. Although those personal guards of Liu Suifeng were considered elite soldiers, how could

they defend themselves from the attack of a Xiantian realm cultivator? Guard after guard was slapped by Wu Qi's powerful attack, falling off the gate while screaming out in pain. Soft innate water energy entered into their bodies and shattered all their internal organs in an instant.

Liu Zhong was wearing a red robe and standing on top of the city gate. Previously, he had been scolding Xiaohei in a condescending manner, but now his face turned pale and he was falling back under the protection of his guards. At the same time, he pointed his finger at Wu Qi and snapped, "Wu Qi, where is my Marquis? Since you are back, our Marquis should also be back? If you dare to act recklessly, my Marquis won't let you off! Who do you think you are?!? How dare you challenge our Marquis!"

Wu Qi killed a guard with a powerful kick, then gazed at Liu Zhong and let out a cruel laugh, "What is all this shit about your Marquis? Liu Suifeng was killed in the forest by some poisonous bugs released by those barbarians. His dead body has started to rot now! If you still have time to wreak havoc here, I suggest you spend some time and think how to inform Lord Puyang of this news!"

"He is dead!" Liu Zhong's face instantly turned green. He sat on the floor and, with a hoarse voice, said, "Dead? Impossible! There are two Xiantian level cultivators protecting Marquis, how could those barbarians possibly kill him?"

Outside of City Gate, Lu Chengfeng sprinted beside three right-hand men of Liu Suifeng. He quickly swung his sword and chopped off their heads. He then pulled up Liu Suifeng's dead body and threw it at the City Gate. With a fierce expression, he shouted, "Here is Liu Suifeng's dead body! Liu Zhong, do you still dare to challenge me? You are just an old dog, a bastard that is no better than my fart. Do you really dare to

challenge me?”

Liu Suifeng’s dead body slammed onto the City Gate forcefully and then fell onto the ground and rolled a few times.

Liu Zhong instantly recognized his master’s face and he burst into tears, “Oh Marquis, why are you dead, what am I going to do? Old master will kill all my family members! I, your servant, have done everything according to your orders, and finally laid out all the accusations that could get Lu Chengfeng killed. Why did you have to die now? How am I going to tell old master about your death?”

It wasn’t just Liu Zhong who collapsed. Those personal guards of Liu Suifeng were struck by the news too. By working for a wealthy and influential family, these guards’ lives were tied together with Liu Suifeng’s life. When Liu Suifeng was living the high life, they would be able to enjoy a luxurious lifestyle too. Now that Liu Suifeng was dead, all of them had to die together with him!

Clanging sounds resounded throughout the scene, as more than half of these personal guards dropped their weapons. They felt as if their very souls had been frozen by the news.

Lu Chengfeng stepped onto the head of Old Devil, who was laying on the ground, and, in an instant, had smashed it into a messy red and white mixture. Lu Chengfeng shouted out, “Damn it, those barbarians broke through the city wall and killed Old Devil! My people, charge into the city, I give you the permission to seize all the belongings of those wealthy tradesmen!”

Lu Chengfeng had become quite savage. Since Liu Zhong had set up all these traps and framed him, if he didn't fight back, his death was almost asured. Also, those wealthy tradesmen had the audacity to join up with Liu Zhong and set their own acting Mayor up. Since they were so willing to betray him, what's the point of having these wealthy tradesmen here anyway?

Just blame everything on those barbarians. Since Little Meng City was known for being assaulted by them, what's so strange to have few wealthy tradesmen killed by them? After killing all those wealthy tradesmen in Little Meng City, it wouldn't take long for new tradesmen to come here. After all, these tradesmen were like flies that were attracted to rotting meat. The death of those tradesmen wouldn't affect the prosperity of Little Meng City at all. They would also gain all the wealth of these tradesmen, which would be quite useful for building up the City Guards.

A faded earthy yellow energy was gathering around Lu Chengfeng's body. He circulated his internal energy and took a few big steps toward the City Gate of Little Meng City. Then, with a powerful force, he punched the center of the gate. While Yi Yan was the Mayor, the poor City Gate had never seen and maintenance. How could it withstand the punch of a Xiantian level cultivator?

With just a single punch, the City Gate was shattered into a thousand pieces, and these fragments flew at high speed and killed a dozen personal guards who worked for some of the wealthy tradesmen.

Lu Chengfeng waved his hand and growled, "Barrage the city from all sides. No one is allowed to enter or leave the city. Wu Qi, watch the sky above, and don't let any single carrier pigeon, sparrow-hawk, or eagle leave the city. Stop all the birds! Kill, kill all the wealthy tradesmen in the

city! We shall evenly split up all their belongings among the city guards!

Xiaohei snarled crazily, and immediately lead a few thousand City Guards and charged into the city.

Zhang Hu and Hu Wei were each leading a troop respectively, storming into the city from the other two City Gates.

Lu Chengfeng turned around and walked in front of those warriors, who had just pledged their loyalty to him. He stared at these warriors, who had their face turning red and were covering themselves with a rolling energy, and, with a loud voice, said, “Follow me and you’ll live in wealth and luxury! Those who submit to me will prosper, those who defy me will meet their maker today!”

His eyes flashing like lightning, Lu Chengfeng glared at those warriors who choose not to submit to him.

Under such circumstances, who dared to hesitate now? All of them bowed deeply toward Lu Chengfeng and shouted, “All hail the master! We will follow all the orders of the master!”

In this instant, Lu Chengfeng had recruited another group of strong warriors to work for him. He let out a laugh and said, “Lead the army and follow me into the city. Those who dare to challenge me, we’ll kill them all!”

Clenched his teeth tightly, Lu Chengfeng turned to Lu Quyuan, who was sitting beside him with a pale face, and snapped, “If you ever try to pull

any more stunts, like the ones you did previously, or like what you all did when I was a child,I'll kill you! Sixth brother, listen now carefully! If you force me again, I'll kill you!"

He forcefully slapped Lu Quyuan's face and sent him flying away. Then Lu Chengfeng ordered few right-hand men to tie him up tightly. After that, he lead the huge group of soldiers and went into the city from the last City Gate.

Wu Qi was running around the city while laughing out loud. From time to time, a pigeon, sparrow-hawk, or eagle would fly out from some luxurious mansion, but all of them were casually killed by Wu Qi.

All the townsfolk shut their doors, and no one dared to leave their homes. In all of those luxurious mansions, the sounds of howling and screaming rose up into the sky.

Chapter 50 - Aftermath

A cloud of black smoke floated over Little Meng City. All the trading companies and mansions had been raided by the City Guards. A massive amount of gold, silver, and jewelry was piling up on the drill grounds of the City Guards. Laohei was equally distributed this wealth according to the number of soldiers.

No matter whether it was a deputy General, a Lieutenant, or even a Captain or soldier, all of them got an equal share of this gold, silver, and jewelry. There were heavy golden pearls, silver ingots, branches of copper coins, smooth and sparkling pearls, bright shining gemstones, expensive leathers and silk, rare herbs, and energy stones. A dozen experienced barbarian hunters and herb harvesters were estimating the value of these treasures on the spot, and had them distributed equally.

All the military officials and soldiers were holding onto big piles of wealth, which they could never earn, even if they worked hard until they died. Their eyes had turned red and they staring at Lu Chengfeng while continuously cheering ‘Hooray’. Cheers of ‘Hail the master!’ resounded throughout the city, as these twenty-eight thousand soldiers felt their spirits, blood, and energy were boiling to the extreme. Right at this moment, even if it was the king of the Lu Kingdom standing in front of them, if Lu Chengfeng asked them to, these crazy soldiers would rip him into pieces.

Wu Qi was leading a group of soldiers and quickly collecting all the dead bodies scattered across the city. He was dumping them into the woods outside Little Meng City. It would only take one night for animals to eat these thousands of dead bodies. Most likely, there probably

wouldn't even be a single hair left, after the animals were finished.

The few hundred tradesmen who were doing their business in Little Meng City were slaughtered by these crazy City Guards. Not a single one of them survived the purge. From Liu Zhong's dead body, they found the paper signed by all these tradesmen. All of them were standing on the opposite side with Lu Chengfeng, and they had all agreed to accuse Lu Chengfeng, under the lead of Liu Zhong.

Watching the carts of dead bodies be pushed out of the city, Wu Qi put his palms together and recited a few 'Amitabha' -

(A celestial buddha described in the scriptures of Mahāyāna Buddhism),

- without any sincerity. "Please enter into your next life as soon as possible. Don't linger in this world and become a foul soul. Your life had ended, in your next life, fight to live a happy life!"

Zhang Hu, who was standing beside him, gave Wu Qi a questioning look, "Brother Wu Qi, what does 'Amitabha' mean?"

Wu Qi stared back at Zhang Hu with a curious look. Maybe the people of this world didn't know the meaning of 'Amitabha'? Wu Qi blinked his eyes, then he explained to Zhang Hu, in a serious tone, "It's nothing special, it is just one of my favorite catchphrase. It is like saying, 'fuck your mother!'."

Zhang Hu felt enlightened and nodded his head. Then he turned around and looked at those dead bodies. With a hideous smile on his face, he yelled out, "Amitabha!"

It took two more days for all the flames in Little Meng City to be put out. All the wealthy tradesmen in the city, together with their servants and personal guards, were slaughtered. All the personal guards of Liu Suifeng were also killed. The City wall of Little Meng City had dozens of breaches, which were caused by Wu Qi and his men during the siege. Crude weapons and armors were scattered all over the place.

The storage room of Barbarian Office was opened up, and all the barbarian heads, which had been turned in by Meng Village and the barbarian hunters not long ago, were taken out from it. After being treated with herbs for many days, these dried up, nearly skeletal, heads were hung up on the City Gate, serving as the evidence for barbarian's attack.

As for why these barbarian heads had become so dried up in just two days, Wu Qi didn't make any explanation on this, and there were no townsfolk who were so stupid as to ask Wu Qi about this issue.

Anyway, Little Meng City was, once again, attacked by barbarians, and the city wall was breached. All the personal guards of Marquis Liu Suifeng had been killed, wealthy tradesmen were robbed of everything they owned. Also, all the storage rooms of Little Meng City were robbed. The warning letter written by Lu Chengfeng had been dispatched with the 'fastest horse'. It should reach the capital in about two or three months.

As for whether Liu Suifeng's bones could be used to make soup after two or three months, Wu Qi didn't raise this topic and Lu Chengfeng also didn't think about it. With this two to three month buffer, they would have time to cover all their tracks.

In the process, when Liu Zhong laid out the traps to frame Lu Chengfeng, all those previous City Guards officials conspired together with him. Therefore all of them were killed, together with their families. Also, all the government officials of Little Meng City, whether they had been forced or attracted by the lucrative promises of Liu Zhong, had signed their names on the document filled with accusations. Thus all of them were killed by barbarians too. The vacated positions were replaced by Lu Chengfeng's newly recruited warriors.

In just three days, all the authority in Little Meng City had fallen back into the hand of Lu Chengfeng, and all the government officials were controlled by him.

All twenty-eight thousand City Guards were now officially stationed within Little Meng City. Eight thousand of them were the City Guards of Little Meng City; Twelve thousand became the personal guards of Lu Chengfeng, and were stationed within the Mayor's Mansion, and the last eight thousand soldiers had their identity transformed. Under the lead of one of Zhang Hu's best friends, they established a troop of barbarian hunters. A barbarian hunters' troop of eight thousand men. This might be the largest barbarian hunter troop in the history of this world.

No matter it was the right-hand men of Lu Chengfeng or all twenty-eight thousand soldiers of City Guards, all of them were satisfied with the gold, silver, and jewelry that Lu Chengfeng had given them. At the same time, these men had their hand stained with the blood of wealthy tradesmen, ex-officials of the City Guards, and all the previous batch of government officials. Their lives were now connected to Lu Chengfeng. Therefore, they had no choice but to pledge their loyalty to Lu Chengfeng.

Three days after the 'barbarian siege', Laohei lead a group of workers

and began the restoration of the city wall. On the other side, Lu Chengfeng had called all the local leaders and elders to have a meeting in Mayor's Mansion. Even some of the elders from Meng Village were invited.

A long table was placed right in the middle of the main hall. Lu Chengfeng was sitting on one side of the table, wearing in a luxurious rope and staring at all the local leaders and elders, who were sitting in front of him. Although the power and influence of these elders and leaders of local clans couldn't compare to that of those wealthy tradesmen who came from outside Little Meng City, they represented all the native people in and around Little Meng City. These people represented those who truly lived here.

Wu Qi glanced at all the people in the hall. With a bright smile on his face, he placed a document on the table in front of these men.

"Clan leaders and elders, according to my young master, Little Meng City had suffered a great loss this time. Every year, the trades between Little Meng City and outside world should have brought us an enormous amount of profits! But all the while, this huge amount of money has been stolen away by those outsiders!"

Clearing his throat, Wu Qi gazed at all the leaders, who had an odd expressions on their faces. He let out a sigh and said, "You are all natives of Little Meng City. Your families had been living here for more than few hundred years. But, what did you get during the past few hundred years? At most, you have a restaurant or hotel. You have girls from your clan becoming prostitutes in exchange for some wealth, or your peoples have become barbarian hunters and herb harvesters, hunters and miners, risking their lives in Meng Mountain in exchange for some pennies."

“But, as for those wealthy tradesmen from outside Little Meng City, they took all the hard-earned treasures, which your peoples gathered, and, as long as they sent them outside of Little Meng City, they would be able to make a huge amount of money, equal to that of dozens of years of spending for your peoples. They gave you few copper coins with their left hand, but in their right hand they held a few gold ingots. They were squeezing you dry, all this while, and all of you, as the true owners of Little Meng City, could do nothing about it!”

One of the elders from Meng Village stood up and bowed toward Wu Qi, saying, “Little brother Wu Qi, you are a friend of Meng Village. Tell me, what exactly does young master Lu wants us to do and we will do it!”

Wu Qi smiled and took a few steps back, standing beside Lu Chengfeng.

Lu Chengfeng placed both hands on the table and leaned his body over the table. With a low, but powerful voice, he said, “All the native clans of Little Meng City, I need you to submit under me from today on. I will make sure that all your future generations will live a prosperous life. From today onwards, all the clans will form a union, the trade union of Little Meng City, which will completely control the trade of all mountain treasures.”

Slamming on the table, Lu Chengfeng continued his speech, “Starting today, the fat meat of Meng Mountain will be ours! All of you will be able to live in luxury, enjoying fine wines and pretty women. You can enjoy the glorious lifestyle every single day, and you can walk proudly across the street. This is what I can promise you: as long as all of you sign the paper and pledge your loyalty to me and to the trade union of Little Meng City,

we will have no problem in sharing the wealth with you."

Right after Lu Cengfeng spoke, Wu Qi let out a mile cough and said, "Oh, I suppose all of you know this, but just two days ago, those barbarians, once again, attacked Little Meng City and caused huge casualties. Who knows? It's possible that a few days from now, those barbarians will come back again. There might be some here that are unlucky that they are beyond my ability to save them!"

This was an obvious threat. Everyone here knew that, if they didn't sign the paper and pledge their loyalty to Lu Chengfeng, they, and their entire families, would probably die. Right now, there were more than twenty thousand 'barbarian soldiers' who were waiting eagerly to kill people and seize their wealth.

The elders from Meng Village quickly and easily made up their minds and they stood up, bit their thumbs, and then pressed their bloody thumbs on the paper. These elders could still write a few words, and they did their best to sign their names on the paper.

With the example set by Meng Village, none of the clan leaders dared to challenge Lu Chengfeng. All of them quickly pressed bloody thumbs to the paper and signed their names on it.

Lu Chengfeng let out a triumphant laugh, then waved his hands and said, "Serve the wine! Let's celebrate this moment with all clan leaders and elders!"

Wu Qi was clapping his hands and laughing, saying, "Perfect, from now on, we are a family! Everybody, Wu Qi wishes you all a prosperous

business and that your wealth will flourish, letting your families grow and knowing that you have a great future!”

A serving lady of Lu Chengfeng came with a tray full of wine bowls and served everyone bowls of fine wine.

Laughter and cheering filled the atmosphere, and the fragrance of the wine filled the air. Everyone drank the toast and, lead by Wu Qi, they smashed their wine bowls on the floor.

The scene looked like that of a leader of bandits distributing his share of wealth, and having all the men working for him become his brothers.

That same night, with the restless effort of Wu Qi, Lu Quyuan was crying his lungs out and, in order to pledge his loyalty to Lu Chengfeng, he signed on a paper of collaboration that, if he leaked out what had happened here, would be enough to make him and his father fall into the abyss of despicable crimes.

With this paper in hand, the sixth son of Lu Family had finally boarded Lu Chengfeng’s ship.

Little Meng City had completely become Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng’s kingdom.

Chapter 51 - Scholar and Military

All the hustle and bustle of the world was only for money.

Two months ago, Little Meng City was ‘besieged by barbarians’, and many wealthy tradesmen and merchants had been killed, their dead bodies piling up like a small hill. A massive amount of wealth and money had been stolen. Two months later, countless tradesmen had come from different kingdoms, once again opening up new shop in Little Meng City.

But this time, these tradesmen were not in charge. They were only allowed to buy from the Little Meng City Trade Union, and, thus, only made a certain percentage of profit. Lu Chengfeng was well versed with the prices of the products and treasures, from the mountain, in every kingdom, and he allowed these foreign tradesmen to earn the same twofold profits. The rest of the profits would belong to Little Meng City.

In just two months, the taxes collected by Little Meng City was equal to the total taxes that were collected in a year and a half by Yi Yan and all the previous Mayors.

The coffers of Little Meng City filled up fast. With high ambitious, Lu Chengfeng had begun the preparations for the rebuilding of the city wall of Little Meng City. He was going to build a solid city wall, made from stone slabs, which could withstand the attacks of the barbarians. Also, the new city wall would expand in all directions, allowing Little Meng City to accommodate a larger area and preparing Little Meng City for future expansion.

With the endless treasures of the mountain supporting them, Lu Chengfeng had the intention to grow Little Meng City into a rich and prosperous city. A city that would be considered a major city in Lu Kingdom. Currently, everyone had the same firm impression that Little Meng City was just a small remote city in a savage land. This would change.

On the tower of the City Gate, two servant girls were holding a ten foot long scroll, which had the brand new city design drawn on top of it. Lu Chengfeng, whose face was glowing, was standing right in front of the scroll with a straight back, pointing here and there on the scroll and thinking about how Little Meng City would look in the future.

Wu Qi absentmindedly replied to Lu Chengfeng. He turned his head sideways and stared out at the main road, which lead to the world outside of the mountain. His brows were knit with a frown.

In two months time, Wu Qi had absorbed all the essence contained within the Innate Water Serpent's pearl, and his cultivation was approaching the peak of the Respiration stage. According to his calculations, with the help from serpent pearl and over two thousand water elemental energy stones, which he had stolen from the coffers of Little Meng City. Any ordinary cultivator would have broken through the Embryonic Breathing stage. They might have even formed their Golden Core.

But the Scroll of Stealing was a miraculous and extraordinary skill. While cultivating through the Xiantian realm, the Scroll of Stealing focused on building a strong foundation, and preparing a perfect foundation for future cultivation. For example, at the Meridian Cultivating stage, ordinary cultivators would only strengthen their meridians, at most, nine times, but in Scroll of Stealing, it suggested one must use innate water

energy to strengthen his meridian at least a hundred and eight times.

So, according to the Source of Water Chapter in the Scroll of Stealing, to break through to the Embryonic Breathing stage Wu Qi would need, at a minimum, twenty times as many energy stones as he currently had. But there was no way for him to get so many water energy stones in Little Meng City.

If he wanted to find a better place to continue his cultivation, he should probably search out and join one of those Sects in this world.

While chatting with Lu Chengfeng these past two months, Wu Qi learned that there were several sects in this world, and that all of them were had a strong influence on the world. However, all these sects relied on the Great Yan Dynasty for their survival, and all the founders of these sects were either descendents of Emperor Yan Dan or his right-hand men.

For example, the real background of the Scouting Officers was that they were all part of a huge sect in the Great Yan Dynasty. Its founder was the Chief General of the Great Yan Dynasty, Jing Ke! All the other big sects had the similar backgrounds. Their founders were all related to the Great Yan Dynasty. These sects were tightly controlled by the Great Yan Dynasty, and they would never teach their cultivation skills to outsiders. In order to become one of their disciples, they must be a genius in cultivation, with a huge potential, or be a descendent of Great Yan Dynasty nobility!

It must be the nobility of the Great Yan Dynasty, not the Lu Kingdom! Those lords and influential families in the Lu Kingdom were nobodies in the Great Yan Dynasty.

Wu Qi was imprinted with Lu Chengfeng's mark, therefore his wish to become a disciple of a Great Yan Dynasty sect was difficult. Extremely difficult! The Great Yan Dynasty wouldn't allow a servant of the secret love child of a small influential family in one of its kingdom to become a disciple in any sects. If they let in a disciple like him, this would create an instability among the kingdoms, and would cause a problem for the Great Yan Dynasty. Therefore, it was extremely tough for Wu Qi to enter any sect in the Great Yan Dynasty.

What a headache, Wu Qi furrowed his brows.

He stared at Lu Chengfeng, who was delivering his speech, and a big question appeared in his mind. Why he was a secret love child of Maiden Rongyang? If he was the secret love child of Yan Dan, that would be really great! With that, his wish to enter a cultivator clan would be a piece of cake!

Breathing out a helpless sigh, Wu Qi shook his head and decided to put this matter aside. He would take it slow for now.

Clearing his mind, Wu Qi was getting ready to listen to Lu Chengfeng's explanation on the new city design when he suddenly saw a cloud of dust rising up into the sky above the main road, as if there was a large group of troops quickly approaching.

Wu Qi leaped up to the tower on the City Gate and stare into the distance. What he saw was a long line of troops, dressed in red, sprinting quickly in this direction. Wu Qi let out a piercing whistle and shouted out, "Close all the gates! All crossbowmen and archers, standby on top of city wall. Now!"

Lu Chengfeng had heard the rumble of the approaching troops too. He dismissed both serving ladies and immediately leaped onto the top floor of City Gate, looking out into the distance. He narrowed his eyes and peered out for a moment. After that, he sneered and said, “Look at the color of their armor, they were sent by Lord Puyang!”

Troops of City Guards had stormed onto the City Gate with their strong bows and crossbows, lining up in a straight line. A swarm of soldiers carrying huge shields and heavy blades were standing behind these crossbowmen and archers. After two months of cruel training, these City Guards had become pretty powerful.

Meng Xiaobai and a group of men from Meng Village had come onto the City Gate. These masculine men from Meng Village were carrying a two inch thick, pure steel shield in one hand, and in the other was a huge broadaxe. They were also wearing thick, pure steel armor. These men looked like a group of moving steel puppets, giving off a frightening visage.

Wu Qi looked at Meng Xiaobai gladly, and thought to himself that this young man was not bad. Two months ago, he was the one who instigated the City Guards to fight a tough battle with Liu Zhong. In the end, he was captured by Liu Zhong and went through cruel torture, but he never begged for mercy. No matter how brutal the torture was, he didn’t even let out a single groan.

This young man could be put to a good use! Wu Qi was scared Meng Xiaobai might be too impulsive and do something reckless again. he hurriedly shouted, “Xiaobai, come here and follow beside young master. You are still a child. Why are you following all the adults there?”

Meng Xiaobai was not convinced and tried to refute him, but all the other men from Meng Village were laughing out loud and chased him out of their group, asking him to standy beside Lu Chengfeng. Meng Xiaobai kept muttering and walked toward the door of City Gate angrily, then he just kept staring at the troops coming from far and didn't look at Wu Qi at all.

"So you have finally learned how to be angry?" Wu Qi let out a cheerful laugh.

The rapid clatter was so loud that it, eventually, sounded like roaring thunder. In just fifteen minutes, over six thousand cavalrymen, who were all wearing in blood red armor, had quickly approached the city. Each of them was riding with two horses, and their armors and war robes were covered with dust. It looked like they had traveled to Little Meng City without taking a rest.

The strong cavalry troop had formed into a square formation outside of the city, and an awful atmosphere aroused from where they stood. These cavalrymen never took their eyes off the City Guards, who were standby on top of City Gate. None of them said anything as if they were just some stone pillars.

Wu Qi took a few steps forward, hiding behind a wall while sticking his head out, and asked, "Who is out there?"

After five minutes of complete silence, a skinny calvalryman, who was not more than six feet tall, slowly rode forward and stopped at about hundred feet away from the gate. The man suddenly gazed at Wu Qi

fiercely, then he snapped, “Personal guard commander of Lord Puyang, Luo Kedi. Under the command of Lord Puyang we are here to fetch our Marquis.”

They were working for Lord Puyang, and they were here to receive the dead body of Liu Suifeng. Wu Qi suddenly felt regret. He should have sent someone earlier and had the dead body of Liu Suifeng returned to Lord Puyang. Doing so would have avoided giving Lord Puyang an excuse to send so many men to Little Meng City. Over six thousand calvarymen were sitting outside the city, all of them were elite soldiers. It was obvious that this Lord Puyang was up to something.

But what did he really want? To kill Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng to get revenge for his own son?

Wu Qi thought for a while, after that he shook his head and said, “We have limited space in the city. General Luo, please have your army encamp outside of the city.”

A well-mannered man who was holding a feather fan in his hand and wearing a blood red leather armor ride forward, he looked at Wu Qi and said with a loud voice, “The purpose of us here is just to fetch out marquis. Once you send the body of Marquis out here, we’ll return at once and won’t cause you any trouble here.”

Wu Qi looked at the well-mannered man and shouted, “Who are you?”

The gentleman replied with the same loud voice, “I’m the right-hand man of Lord Puyang, my name is Ma Liang.”

Lu Chengfeng dashed beside Wu Qi, he looked at both men below the City Gate and let out a loud laugh, “I had long heard about there are two famous right-hand men of Lord Puyang: the military commander who has the ability to behead an enemy leader in the middle of a thousand soldiers, General Luo Kedi. The scholar who haa the tongue who can kill anyone with his words, Mr. Ma Liang. I, Chengfeng, consider it a great honor to meet both of you today!”

Ma Ling had a smile on his face, and casually hold his fist toward the City Gate.

On the other side, Luo Kedi was shouted fiercely, “Enough for your nonsense. Hand over the body of Marquis and we’ll return at once.”

Six thousand blood red armor soldiers shouted at the same time, “Marquis! Marquis! Marquis!”

All of these soldiers had quite a strong cultivation level, as the cheers of the six thousand soldiers had shaken the city wall of Little Meng City.

“Looks like they are furious!” Lu Chengfeng’s brows knit in a frown.

“Why do I have a feeling that once we open up the City Gate and send the body out, these soldiers will siege Little Meng City and slaughter all of us?” Wu Qi looked at Luo Kedi and Ma Liang, while smiling, and, with a low voice, said, “Is it because we have done quite a lot of bad things?”

Lu Chengfeng gazed at him, displeased, and said, “Liu Suifeng was killed by a poisonous bug. It had nothing to do with us.”

Wu Qi remains silent for a while, then he whispered, “But I was the one who flicked that poisonous bug into his ear!”

Wu Qi sniggered, but Lu Chengfeng’s eyes suddenly became pale, and he couldn’t say a word at all. He suddenly had the same feeling as Wu Qi. No matter how he looked at it, those six thousand soldiers looked like they were getting ready to siege the city for revenge.

Both men kept looking at each other. After some time, Lu Chengfeng finally shouted out, “General Luo, please come in, together with Mr. Ma Liang and one hundred soldiers, and I’ll prepare the body of the Marquis for you.”

Luo Kedi raised his head up and stared at Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng for some time. After sitting there for a moment, he waved his hand.

From the army behind him, one hundred cavalry sprinted forward.

Chapter 52 - Confrontation

As Lui Kedi and Ma Liang led a group of hundred bloody red armor calvaries and slowly entered Little Meng City, depressing clatters resounded throughout the area.

Lu Chengfeng looked closely at the rides of these soldiers. In next second, his expression became awful. These rides looked like the combination of big dogs and horses. They had a muscular chest and hind legs, and a pair of slim but powerful front feet, showing that they were capable of using incredible explosive force for a short distance charge. These animals had horns on their head and their skin was covered with scales. Their toes had razor sharp claws and their fangs looked like short daggers.

"Crocotta beast. The distinctive ride of the first Heavenly battalion of the Yulin Army in the Capital of the Lu Kingdom. Each of these Crocottas has the combat strength of a mid-level practitioner." Lu Chengfeng lowered his voice and spoke softly, "Lord Puyang is only related to the Lu Kingdom through his wife. What allowed him to manoeuvre this Yulin army?"

"His wife is related to the Lu Kingdom?" When Wu Qi heard the name of Yulin Army, he knew this was going to be a lot of trouble.

"The wife of Lord Puyang is Princess Yingchuan of the Lu Kingdom, the youngest daughter of the king." Lu Chengfeng replied. He continued, hastily saying, "The youngest sister of Lord Puyang was married to Lu Buhuan. He is the younger brother of the Lu Kingdom's King. He is in

charge of the Lu Kingdom's guards."

Lu Chengfeng clapped on his lap, gnashing his teeth and said, "How dare Lu Buhuan maneuver the Yulin army without permission. He really has a lot of nerves!"

Wu Qi didn't have too much interest in how Lu Buhuan maneuvered the Yulin army without permission, but he did take notice in the complicated relationship of Lord Puyang's family. Lord Puyang had married with the youngest daughter of the King of the Lu Kingdom, and his sister was married to his wife's uncle. Therefore, how was he going to address his own son? This was all really confusing. The marriage between these influential families was just a mess.

With a stern and overbearing atmosphere, Luo Kedi and his men, and their a hundred and two rides, entered Little Meng City. The City Gate was closed immediately. Within the low tower of the City Gate, with the guidance of Wu Qi, the craftsmen of Little Meng City had secretly built a few ballista. Now, each of these ballista had their strings pulled to the maximum, and pure steel bolts, which were the size of spears, were aiming right at Luo Kedi and his men.

Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng quickly came down from the City Wall. When they arrived in front of Luo Kedi, Lu Chengfeng bowed toward him and said, "General Luo, Chengfeng welcomes you to Little Meng City!"

Riding on his Crocotta, Luo Kedi overlooked Lu Chengfeng and, without showing any emotion on his face, he shook his head and said, "I am a Brigadier General. A mayor should address me in the way one addresses a superior. You and I don't have any personal relationship, so addressing yourself to me as 'Chengfeng' is not appropriate."

Luo Kedi's words were like his expression, stern and unfriendly. Lu Chengfeng's expression quickly changed, turning into a similarly cold and indifferent expression, and he bowed one more time and said, "Your subordinate was being rude. Brigadier General, your subordinate, the acting Mayor of Little Meng City, Lu Chengfeng, welcomes you!"

Luo Kedi raised up his whip and pounded forcefully on Lu Chengfeng's shoulder. Then he sneered and said, "I'm flattered. Welcome or not, we'll know later. Where is our Marquis? Bring me to him now. Also, where are Liu Zhong and all the other useless fools?"

The pure steel handle of the whip had made Lu Chengfeng's shoulder feel pain. He took a step back and, in a deep voice, said, "Please follow me. The body of Marquis has been well preserved by your subordinate. As for Liu Zhong and all other personal guards of Marquis. They were killed by the barbarians during the siege."

All of a sudden, Ma Liang jumped into the conversation and asked, "All the personal guards of the Marquis were killed?"

Wu Qi took a step forward and answered solemnly, "That's right. The barbarians had broken through the City Wall and Liu Zhong leads all the personal guards and said he wanted to get revenge for the Marquis. They all dashed into a group of barbarians and, as a result, were all slaughtered by the barbarians."

Ma Liang snapped, "Not a single survivor?"

Wu Qi breathed out a sorrowful sigh and said, "The Marquis had a

group of loyal men working for him. When they heard the news about the Marquis's death, all of them swore to follow in his footstep. therefore, none of them made it."

Ma Liang suddenly burst out in a laugh, "I see, it is a worthy death for them. But I never expect that an old fool like Liu Zhong would have the courage to do such a thing. I thought an old fool like that would only cherish his own life, and wouldn't have the courage to die with his master."

Wu Qi was laughing as he looked at Ma Liang and said, "That's the reason why we shouldn't judge a book by its cover, and we also can't judge a person from the impressions he gives. Old Liu Zhong gave up his life for his honor. This is an example we should all learn from. Lord Puyang was, indeed is a worthy man, as all his subordinates were overbearing and loyal. There is no better example that could be set, other than this!"

Luo Kedi's lips twitched. He almost couldn't hold himself and wished to kill Wu Qi with his whip. On the other side, Ma Liang was also clenching his fist tightly. He too wished he could crush Wu Qi's skull with the whip. Lu Chengfeng placed his hand on his back and pinched hard on his waist. Only then he was able to hold back the violent laugh that was rising in his mind.

No better example could be set other than this? What a good description.

No one had anything more to say, and they remained in silence until they finally arrived at the Mayor's Mansion. Along the way, with his eagle-like vision, Luo Kedi glanced through every single street and small alley,

looking at those newly built tall archery towers, and those permanent street barricade built between the roads.

Since the ‘barbarian siege’ incident two months ago, Wu Qi had lead the soldiers of the City Guards and started the construction of these defensive building in Little Meng City. He managed to construct an archery tower every two hundred feet, a street barricade every thousand feet, and an emergency escape tunnel, which connected to every single house, in just two months.

Luo Kedi’s face darkened. He estimated in his mind that, just with all these archery towers and street barricades that he saw, if he really initiated a siege with his cavalrymen, even if they managed to break into the city, they would suffer a lot of damage.

Ma Liang’s eyes were sparkling as well, and he kept peering at those archery towers and street barricades, his brows knitted in thought. When they had arrived at the front gate of the Mayor’s Mansion, Ma Liang suddenly threw out a question, “I heard that those barbarians had slaughtered all the wealthy tradesmen in the city? So now all the business of specialty products in Little Meng City are handled by the natives?”

Wu Qi didn’t say too much, he just nodded his head and said, “You are quite well informed.”

Ma Liang had his brows knitted even move tightly. What he said just now was like a heavy punch, but Wu Qi’s answer was like soft and light cotton, giving him a feeling of missing a solid target. Which was uncomfortable and awful to him.

The gate leading to Mayor Mansion had opened up, and the group of men continued their way inside.

Liu Suifeng's coffin was placed in the ruined field, which was previously the inner chamber of Yi Yan. The fire had burned everything down on this field, so Wu Qi simply ordered some men to build a huge shed on the field, and placed numerous green pines and blue cypresses around it. They were continuously praying while surrounded by a large amount of fresh flowers, joss sticks, and candles, Liu Suifeng's coffin was placed right in the middle of fresh flowers and green plants. He also hired some men and women to act as Liu Suifeng's filial children and grandchildren, asked them to cry their lungs out in front of the coffin, thus creating a sad and solemn atmosphere.

Looking at the huge shed in front of them, and the huge coffin made with the whole wood of a Golden Leaf Sandalwood Tree, Luo Kedi and Ma Liang became speechless.

From the position of this shed, one could tell this place was the best place in the Mayor's Mansion, in term of feng shui. It was supposed to be the residence of the Mayor, but now it had become a temporary shelter for Liu Suifeng's coffin. Luo Kedi and Ma Liang couldn't find any problems in terms of formalities.

Green pines and blue cypresses, fresh flowers, joss sticks, candles, and over s hundred filial children and grandchildren, who were crying their lungs out, all the formalities were there, even better than they expected. What could they complain about?

Putting sorrowful looks on their faces, Luo Kedi and Ma Liang offered joss sticks to Liu Suifeng. After that, Ma Liang gritted his teeth and

shouted, “Men, perform an autopsy!”

Wu Qi instantly gasped, autopsy? For real? Was this the idea of Lord Puyang or Lu Buhuan? This was so cruel!

Five short and skinny old men walked out from among the hundreds of calvary. They looked ghastly pale and carried the pungent smell of dead bodies. They walked unsteadily and didn’t seem to have much internal energy and cultivation, but all of them had pairs of bright eyes. They looked at the living humans around them like they were looking at a corpse.

They walked in front of the coffin and pushed opened the cover, then they lifted Liu Suifeng’s corpse from the coffin.

Liu Suifeng’s corpse was covering with thick silk clothes, and on top of it was a thick layer of fragrant powder and herbs, to prevent the corpse from becaming rotten. This five old men neatly cut through the silk clothes with a small knife, exposing Liu Suifeng’s corpse, which had turned black.

“He was killed by deadly poison, the wound is in his ear!”

“No internal injury, all his internal organs are intact.”

“His private part was severely wounded, besides that, no other injury.”

Five old men were using five small knives and quickly cut through Liu Suifeng’s corpse, taking out all his internal organs, including his brain.

After that they used all kinds of strange devices and carefully examined each of them. They even cut a small piece of Liu Suifeng's liver and soaked it with a weird color potion. From the color transformation in the potion, they could tell what kind of poison Liu Suifeng suffered from, and how many of poisons were in his body.

When Lu Chengfeng saw Liu Suifeng being sliced and diced up, he immediately turned around and looked somewhere else.

But Wu Qi was standing beside these old men and watching curiously. He was admiring their neat and skillful movements. From time to time, he would ask them what kinds of devices and potions they were using. In his mind, this was just an autopsy performed by some forensic scientists. What is there to be so surprised about?

After working restlessly with Liu Suifeng's corpse for nearly an hour, these old men finally stood up and wiped away the sweat from their foreheads.

"General Luo, Mister Ma. The Marquis was killed by a deadly poison from a bug that crawled inside his ear. But the injury on his private part is pretty odd." Five old men lined up in front of Luo Kedi and bowed deeply.

Luo Kedi walked up to the side of Liu Suifeng and stared at body for some time. Then he gnashed his teeth and said, "Lord Puyang has told us that we must get to the bottom of the Marquis's death. No matter who was behind this, he will have to prepare to face death!"

Turned around, Luo Kedi shouted fiercely, "Where is Lu Quyuan? Didn't he enter the mountain together with you all? Where is Lu Quyuan?"

Stumped out in fury, Luo Kedi roared out in anger, “The Marquis was under the protection of two Embryonic Breath stage of Xiantian realm cultivators. How could he be killed? Why did all of you survive and are now standing alive right in front of me? Get Lu Quyuan here, I want to talk to him, now!”

Lu Chengfeng cleared his throat. At the same time, Zhang Hu quickly brought Lu Quyuan, whose face had turned pale. here.

Just when Lu Quyuan arrived at the shed, he immediately kneeled in front of Liu Suifeng’s corpse and started to cry out in sorrow.

“Marquis Liu, what a tragic death for you! After you were dead, they still want to tear your corpse into pieces! They won’t even let you have an intact corpse!”

Chapter 53 - The Last Assassins

‘They won’t even let you have an intact corpse’.

He only said a few words, but these words made the atmosphere extremely heavy. Not only those five old men, who performed the autopsy, but even Luo Kedi and Ma Liang’s faces instantly turned pale. Luo Kedi let out a cold humph and took a step forward, placing his palm on the handle of his sword. On the other side, Ma Liang grunted and extended his hand, stopping Luo Kedi from doing anything. After that, with both hands on his back, he walked in front of Lu Quyuan, who was crying his heart out.

“Sixth Young Master of the Lu Family. Please tell me what happened during the mountain expedition, in detail.”

After some sobbing, Lu Quyuan finally raised his tearing face up and answered, stammering, “Scouting Officer Yan Bugui had given us an order. He said that those who dare to leak out any insight about the mission will die, and that all the titles and official positions of his family would be striped away, and the entire family would be condemned to lifelong exile.”

Ma Liang’s mouth was hanging wide open. He was immediately intimidated by what Lu Quyuan said.

Wu Qi nodded his head silently. Lu Quyuan indeed was from influential family. He didn’t tell Lu Quyuan say that, but he was able to use Yan

Bugui's name and bluffed Ma Liang all by himself. He really proved himself to be the sixth young master of the Lu Family.

Luo Kedi, who was standing beside him, stamped his feet forcefully and snapped, "Then, tell us how the Marquis died!"

When Lu Quyuan heard the question, he once again cried his lungs out and even slamming his head on the ground few times. After that, with his remaining arm, he grabbed on Luo Kedi's thigh, blowing his nose and tears on Lu Kedi's combat rope. With a stammering voice, together with endless sobbing and coughing, Lu Quyuan began to explain how Liu Suifeng was horribly killed in the forest, which, of course, was a story made up by Wu Qi and himself.

Basically, most of the things he said were true. There was nothing much worth suspecting in this account of Liu Suifeng's death. Old Devil and Lord Flame were both killed by barbarian beast warriors, this was a fact that Lu Quyuan could vow for, genuinely, even if he was standing in front of all the mighty gods. As for Liu Suifeng, he was killed by the deadly poison from some mysterious bugs. Once again, Lu Quyuan swore on the souls of all his ancestors that Liu Suifeng was really killed by a poisonous bug.

Lu Quyuan repeated over and over again, while Ma Liang kept throwing him all sort of questions. However, all the replies had been tested and modified countless times by Wu Qi. How could there be any mistakes? Although Ma Liang was Lord Puyang's most intelligent subordinate, compared to Le Xiaobai's god-level intellect, he was still far behind.

Lu Quyuan's replies covered all the bases, and there was nothing at all to pick at. Wu Qi even designed some inconsistencies in Lu Quyuan's

statement purposely, blurring some minor details. Such imperfections actually made Lu Quyuan's replies more trustworthy.

Ma Liang's heart became heavier and heavier, as he could verify what Lu Quyuan said was trustworthy. Liu Suifeng was really killed by those barbarians in the forest. Swiftly exchanging a look with Luo Kedi, Ma Liang gritted his teeth and shouted, "Then how was Liu Zhong killed? Sixth young master Lu, please tell me everything you know about this, in detail!"

How was Liu Zhong killed? Of course, there was nothing that could be faulted with Lu Quyuan's answers. He and Wu Qi had practiced and practiced the answers to perfection.

Since there was no fault in his answers, Ma Liang could only blink his eyes and lower his head in frustration, sinking into deep thoughts.

Clearing his throat, Luo Kedi pushed away Lu Quyuan's arm, which was hugging his thigh, and, with a cold voice, said, "So, Mayor Lu, I still have the same question. Our Marquis was protected by two Embryonic Breath Stage Xiantian Realm cultivators. Why did he die in the forest, but all of you are still alive?"

When Lu Chengfeng was about to answer, Wu Qi suddenly laughed out loud, saying, "It is really funny for General Luo to ask this! So, in your mind, all of us were suppose to die in the forest as well?"

Luo Kedi kept staring at Wu Qi, and, with a cruel tone, said, "Our Marquis has died. Both of the cultivators, who were supposed to protect him have died, but why are you still alive?" The skinny body of Luo Kedi

moved slightly and, in an instant, a warm energy shots out from his body, and light red natural energy in surrounding area began to quickly flow into his body.

He was a warrior in Xiantian realm as well. Also, judging from his the energy around him, he had broken through to 'Physical Strengthening' Stage of the Xiantian Realm. When those fire energies flowed into his body, all his skin started glowing with a faded red light, and his war robe caught on fire. The flame was covering Luo Kedi and, in just a short moment, his war robe had been burned into ashes, leaving him in his blood red armor.

Wu Qi took a few steps back without saying anything. With a wave of his hand, a few hundred City Guards in the surrounding area had raised up their nine-bolt crossbows and aimed them at Luo Kedi.

"Take it easy, let's not do anything stupid!" Wu Qi sneered and said, "Even General Luo is a Xiantian realm cultivator, with so many nine-bolt crossbows shooting at the same time, I'm sure you will be riddled with bolts. I don't think you want to taste that, do you?"

Ma Liang, again, cleared his throat, and, with a slight tremor of his body, Luo Kedi retracted the light red fire energy back into his body.

"Sorry for being so rude!" Ma Liang held his fist toward Wu Qi and said, "Old Luo has always had this hot temper, but he actually had no bad intentions. He just couldn't accept the tragic death of the Marquis. I hope Mayor Lu will let us bring the Marquis's coffin out from the city. We'll return to the capital immediately."

Lu Chengfeng nodded his head and asked, “You don’t want to spend a night here and rest?”

Ma Liang breathed out a sigh and said, “What’s done is done, and we aren’t in the mood to rest. The earlier we bring the Marquis back, the better.”

Wu Qi continued and asked, “Turning Marquis into this messy state... Was your own idea or Lord Puyang’s order?” Wu Qi pointed at Marquis Liu, who had all his internal organs removed. A Marquis had his corpse chopped and sliced up, this was something really weird.

Ma Liang breathed out a sigh again, “How is it possible for us to have this amount of courage? It was Marquis himself who wanted to know the exact way his son was killed.”

Wu Qi asked again, “So, both of you just want to bring Marquis’s body back in this manner? Do you want me to look for some skillful men to stitch the Marqui’s body back together?”

Before Ma Liang could say a word, Luo Kedi had roared out impatiently, “Why do you keep nagging us? Men, place Marquis into the coffin and we’ll leave, now!” Taking a glance at all the nine bolts crossbows that were being held by the City Guards, Luo Kedi sneered, “I never expected that Little Meng City would have such good military equipment. Where did you find so many nine-bolt crossbows?”

Wu Qi said with an indifferent tone, “Oh, these nine-bolts crossbows were left behind by the personal guards of the Marquis after they were killed. Of course, we can’t let them go to waste. Since these crossbows

belonged to Marquis, our young master is willing to buy them for a high price!"

Luo Kedi's expression changed, and it seemed he was just about to do something, but Ma Liang, standing at the side, immediately let out a laugh and said, "They are just some trivial things. How much could they worth? Never mind, since the Marquis is no longer here, we will just leave these nine-bolt crossbows in Little Meng City!"

Breathing out a sigh again, Ma Liang lowered his head and looked at Lu Quyuan, who was kneeling on the ground crying his lungs out, "Sixth young mister Lu, we'll return to capital right now. Do you want to come with us and return to Liyang?"

Lu Quyuan paused for a moment, then said, "No, I sent a letter to my family and they have sent someone to come pick me up. Also, my duties as the assistant Supervisory Official are not yet complete. I don't have the courage to neglect my job!"

"Ma Liang breathed out a long sigh, he nodded his head slowly and said, "That's fine, that's fine!"

The five old men who performed the autopsy, swiftly picked up Liu Suifeng's body and threw it back into the coffin and quickly covered it up. Dozens of cavalrymen in blood red armor walked to the coffin and lifted the two thousand pound coffin into the air, carrying it and following behind Luo Kedi and Ma Liang, as they walked in the direction of the City Gate.

Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng were accompanying them together. As for Lu

Quyuan, he was crying and yelling out Liu Suifeng's name as he followed behind them.

Just when they were about to leave the Mayor's Mansion, Wu Qi suddenly asked, "But, something is really strange. There should've been some 'assassins' who grew up together with Marquis Liu, and provided protection around the clock. Why I didn't see them in all of this?"

Luo Kedi and Ma Liang's faces trembled. Lu Quyuan explained while sobbing, "On our way to Little Meng City, we had a bet with few young masters from the Yan family in Tea City. All of my 'assassins' died in the fight. Two of the Marquis's 'assassins' were badly wounded and sent back to the capital for their recovery."

Ma Liang shook his head and sighed, "The two assassins protecting the Marquis were pretty strong. If they struck with all they had, they would be able to unleash a power that could stand up to a cultivator at the Respiration stage of the Xiantian Realm. If both of them were still here, the Marquis would have been able to survive that forest. This is his destiny! If not because they had the confidence that two Xiantian cultivators would be able to protect the safety of the Marquis, how could they allow Marquis to come here without the protection of his assassins?"

"Oh?" Wu Qi turned his head and looked around him. He unleashed his senses, which were now able to cover an area of more than a hundred feet. He had this feeling that something was not right, but he couldn't figure out what exactly the problem was.

Luo Kedi kept a straight face and kept his mouth shut. Ma Liang had a sad expression and walked slowly, talking with Wu Qi on and off.

Soon Wu Qi begun to understand the whole picture. Although Lord Puyang had a few children, he and Princess Yingchuan adored Liu Suifeng the most, as Liu Suifeng was the child of Princess Yingchuan, and thus the grandson of the King of the Lu Kingdom. Therefore his status was completely different than other children his age. Liu Suifeng had been given the title of Marquis at such a young age. This showed how the King of Lu Kingdom and Princess Yingchuan spoiled him.

If not because of the blind love from Princess Yingchuan toward Liu Suifeng, which made her keep begging at her father for it, how could a young man, who never made any contributions, get the title of Marquis?

As they walked and talked, Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng had finally sent Luo Kedi and Ma Liang out from Little Meng City.

Luo Kedi kept the same straight face and brought his men back into the main group of calvary. He did not bid goodbye to Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng.

Ma Liang was politely bowing and said his goodbyes to Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng. Before he left, and with a bitter smile, he said, “Princess Yingchuan love for the Marquis wass unbelievable!” Breathing out a long sigh and finished this rather baffling phrase, Ma Liang turned his ride and began to leave.

Wu Qi’s expression changed dramatically, and his heart started to pound violently. In an instant, he screamed out, “Men, kill them all!”

Snatching a nine-bolts crossbow from a nearby soldier, Wu Qi aimed at

Ma Laing's back and pulled the trigger.

'Click', nine bolts made of pure steel darted out at lighting speed.

Suddenly, some shrill swooshing sound came underneath them, and ten bright shining blades emerged from the ground, with three foot long sword lights protruding from their tips. They went straight toward Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng's groins.

The sword light of this blade was freezing cold. In an instant, they had blocked path of retreat for Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng.

Wu Qi grabbed on Lu Chengfeng and leapt high up into the sky, but, suddenly, the empty space beside them began to twist, and two blurry black figures appeared out of nowhere. Both of these black figures spreads their arms and leapt in Wu Qi's direction. Just a few feet before they reached Wu Qi, their bodies quickly inflated and became like balloons. In next second, both of them exploded violently.

"Follow in the Marquis's footsteps and die!"

This was said by both of the black-clothed figures before they exploded.

Poisonous gas, poisonous blood, poisonous meat, and poisonous bones were sent flying everywhere. Most of them were thrown toward Wu Qi and Lu Chengfeng.

Ma Liang, who was nearly a hundred feet away, turned around and

slapped away all nine bolts which were shot at him. He stared at Little Meng City and yelled out, “Following the orders from Princess Yingchuan, breach Little Meng City and kill without mercy! All those who live in this city will be sacrificed in memory of the Marquis!”

